Biological Control
Pacific Prospects
— Supplement 2
Plate 2  
Biological Control
Pacific Prospects
— Supplement 2

D.F. Waterhouse
The Australian Centre for International Agricultural Research (ACIAR) was established in June 1982 by an Act of the Australian Parliament. Its mandate is to help identify agricultural problems in developing countries and to commission collaborative research between Australian and developing country researchers in fields where Australia has a special research competence.

Where trade names are used this constitutes neither endorsement of nor discrimination against any product by the Centre.

ACIAR MONOGRAPH SERIES

This peer-reviewed series contains the results of original research supported by ACIAR, or deemed relevant to ACIAR's research objectives. The series is distributed internationally, with an emphasis on the Third World.

© Australian Centre for International Agricultural Research
GPO Box 1571, Canberra, ACT 2601.


ISBN 1 86320 076 2

Typeset in 11/12 Times using a Macintosh II running Aldus PageMaker
by Ms A. Ankers, Publication Services Unit, CSIRO Division of Entomology,
Canberra, ACT
Printed by Brown Prior Anderson, 5 Evans Street,
Burwood, Victoria 3125
# Contents

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.</td>
<td>Introduction</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.</td>
<td>Pest fruitflies in the oceanic Pacific</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.</td>
<td><em>Icerya aegyptiaca</em>, breadfruit mealybug</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.</td>
<td><em>Neotermes rainbowi</em>, coconut termite</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.</td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum chinense</em>, Honolulu rose</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.</td>
<td>References</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8.</td>
<td>Index of scientific names of insects</td>
<td>127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.</td>
<td>Previous dossiers on Pacific pests</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Foreword

Ever since its formation in 1982 ACIAR has been an enthusiastic supporter of classical biological control of insect and weed pests as one of the major means available to establish low-energy, sustainable agriculture in the oceanic Pacific. Amongst other initiatives, its support for, and publication of, ‘Biological Control: Pacific Prospects’ (1987) and its ‘Supplement 1’ (1989) by D.F. Waterhouse and K.R. Norris has generated a rapidly growing momentum for biological control in the south and west Pacific. The information provided in these books on the distribution and importance of the major pests of the region and on their promising natural enemies (if known), has had a significant multiplier effect. Amongst other outcomes, it has greatly facilitated the generation of financial support for some 20 current programs, already with several successes and other projects showing promise.

In order to foster safe and sound procedures for this increased activity, ACIAR and the South Pacific Commission have jointly sponsored the publication of ‘Guidelines for Biological Control Projects in the Pacific’ by D.F. Waterhouse (1991b) and these have now been adopted by the South Pacific Commission for a trial period of two years as a provisional code of practice.

As well as the current projects, there are at least a similar number awaiting attention and many additional species that have not yet been dealt with but which might well be suitable targets. However, relevant published and unpublished information in the latter group is not yet readily available to enable a sound assessment. ACIAR has, therefore, supported the preparation of this second supplement by Dr Waterhouse to start to fill this important gap.

Once again, ACIAR is very grateful to the many individuals in the Pacific who have enthusiastically and unanimously endorsed the project and often provided valuable unpublished observations; also to Dr Paul Ferrar, Coordinator of the Crop Sciences program for his unflagging support.

G.H.L. Rothschild
Director
Australian Centre for International Agricultural Research, Canberra, 1993
The five pest dossiers in this Supplement follow closely the format established in Biological Control: Pacific Prospects and its Supplement 1. Two of the dossiers, in draft form, (on *Icerya aegyptiaca* and *Clerodendrum chinense*) have already led to the initiation of projects in the Pacific and a third (on fruitflies) is basic to one that has recently been selected by the South Pacific Commission - German Agency for Technical Cooperation Biological Control Project based in Suva. The fourth dossier outlines encouraging prospects for the biological control of pigweed (*Portulaca oleracea*) which is of considerable importance not only in the Pacific but also in Southeast Asia. The fifth dossier (on *Neotermes rainbowi*) has been prepared so that, with the dossier on *Icerya aegyptiaca*, some attention is given to major problems, peculiar to low coral atolls. These problems often compete unsuccessfully for scarce resources with those of more populated high islands.

The distribution and importance in the Pacific of these pests is shown in Table 1.1 and that of the main pest fruit flies in Table 2.2, using the conventions adopted previously. The format of Chapter 2 dealing with a group of 18 fruit flies is somewhat modified to make it more appropriate to the interacting complexities involved.

**Table 1.1** Distribution and importance of four Pacific pests.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Country</th>
<th><em>Icerya aegyptiaca</em></th>
<th><em>Neotermes rainbowi</em></th>
<th><em>Clerodendrum chinense</em></th>
<th><em>Portulaca oleracea</em></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Cook Is</td>
<td>*</td>
<td>*</td>
<td>*</td>
<td>*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Federated States of Micronesia</td>
<td>+++</td>
<td>*</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>+++</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>++</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>French Polynesia</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>P</td>
<td>+++</td>
<td>++</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guam</td>
<td>P</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>*</td>
<td>P</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiribati</td>
<td>+++</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marshall Is</td>
<td>P</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>New Caledonia</td>
<td>++</td>
<td>*</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Niue</td>
<td>++</td>
<td>生活</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Northern Marianas</td>
<td>P</td>
<td>*</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>+</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Papua New Guinea</td>
<td>P</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>American Samoa</td>
<td>+++</td>
<td>*</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Western Samoa</td>
<td>+++</td>
<td>*</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Solomon Is</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tokelau</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tonga</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tuvalu</td>
<td>*</td>
<td>+++</td>
<td>+++</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vanuatu</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>++</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wallis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>P</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Plant protection experts in the Pacific have, on three occasions (1985, 1990, 1992), generously provided information on their major arthropod pests and weeds and also ratings for importance, on the following scale:

* one of the country's top 10 arthropod pests or top 10 weeds
+++ very widespread and very important
++ less widespread, but of great importance
+ important locally
P present, but unimportant

No attempt has been made to summarise all the literature on each pest, especially in relation to chemical control, for which recommendations often rapidly become outdated; and, in any case, pesticide use is less relevant in the Pacific than to many other countries. On the other hand, published (and, where available, unpublished) information on natural enemies has been covered in some detail, including biological and ecological information relevant to successful biological control.

The predecessors of this publication have, apart from the inclusion of Guam, been heavily biased towards the south west Pacific. In this Supplement the coverage has been extended to all of Micronesia. The treatment remains focussed on the relevance of the information to traditional agriculturists in the Pacific, although the dossiers contain much information relevant to the same pests elsewhere.

It would not have been possible to assemble as much information without the unstinting assistance of many colleagues throughout the Pacific (and elsewhere) who have given generously of their time and knowledge and often provided unpublished observations.

Over 400 insect species are referred to in the chapters, and the author, order and family of each is provided in the index of scientific names of insects. There have been many changes in the names used in the literature quoted in the chapters. These changes have been incorporated as far as possible although, in some instances, there is no consensus among modern taxonomists on what the correct terminology should be. Most frequently, the terminology of the CAB Institute of Entomology has been adopted. Where confusion may occur, the superseded name, preceded by an equals sign is enclosed in brackets. This is not intended to imply that the bracketed name is necessarily a formal synonym, since the change may have been made for other reasons.

In the maps at the head of chapters 2 to 6 the lines do not imply that all islands or land masses encircled are necessarily infested, as the lines generally follow political boundaries. As additional information becomes available, or the situation changes, there will certainly be a need to adjust the extent of some of the areas included.

The precis at the front of each chapter is not intended to serve as a summary of the information it contains, but rather as a rapid aide-memoire to some of the key matters relating to prospects for biological control.

For ready reference the 55 dossiers that have already been published in Biological Control: Pacific Prospects and its Supplement 1 (on 36 insect pests, 1 mite, 1 mollusc and 17 weeds) are listed on pages 137-138.

It is essential when carrying out biological control introductions that appropriate precautions are taken to ensure that natural enemies to be introduced are adequately specific and that they are not accompanied by any unintended organisms, especially harmful species. Guidelines dealing with these and related matters and provisionally endorsed by the South Pacific Commission are available for the Pacific (Waterhouse 1991b).
I wish to acknowledge the facilities generously provided by the Division of Entomology, CSIRO and the valuable assistance of many of its staff, in particular of Dr D.P.A. Sands (Brisbane). Special thanks are also due to M. Carver, P. Cranston, E.D. Edwards, B. Fletcher, C. Hunt, M. Lenz, K.R. Norris (Canberra) and M. Julien (Brisbane) all of CSIRO, together with P. Ferrar (ACIAR), P. Gullan (ANU), M.A. Bateman (Sydney), R.A.I. Drew, R. McFadyen and J.T. Swarbrick (Brisbane), J. Beardsley, C.J. Davis, W.C. Mitchell and M.A. Whistler (Hawaii), A. Allwood (Suva) R.A. Wharton (Texas), A.C. Pont (UK) and I.M. White (CABI, London).

With unfailing good humour and dedication, Ms A. Ankers (Canberra) converted manuscripts, apparently effortlessly (!), into camera-ready copy.
Figure 2.1  Distribution of pest fruit flies in the Pacific.
Figure 2.2  Distribution of pest fruit flies in the Pacific
Figure 2.3  Distribution of pest fruit flies in the Pacific
Figure 2.4  Distribution of pest fruit flies in the Pacific
Figure 2.5  Distribution of pest fruit flies in the Pacific
Pest fruit flies in the oceanic Pacific

Precis
Tropical fruit flies have not, in general, proved to be good targets for biological control, a situation that is all the more unfortunate since more than a dozen damaging or potentially damaging native species occur in the oceanic Pacific. Nevertheless, biological control programs can result in significant reductions in fly populations.

The only really outstanding success has been achieved in Hawaii against two introduced species, the oriental fruit fly *Bactrocera dorsalis* of Indo-Malaysian origin and the Mediterranean fruit fly *Ceratitis capitata*. Populations have been reduced by up to 95% and several cultivated fruits, previously very heavily infested, have become practically free from attack. This result is due mainly to the establishment of the wasp *Fopius arisanus*, sometimes with an added effect from *Fopius vandenboschi* and to a lesser extent by *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata*. In more recent times, *Psyttalia incisi* has also contributed to fly mortality. On the other hand, after initial very promising results, only limited success has been achieved in Hawaii against the introduced melon fly *Bactrocera cucurbitae* of Indo-Malaysian origin. This fly is not susceptible to the four parasitoids mentioned above. However, it is attacked by *Psyttalia fletcheri*, although chiefly in wild hosts and only to a limited extent in commercial crops.

In Fiji, *Fopius arisanus* and to some extent *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata*, have provided moderate, but still inadequate, control of the two major native pest fruit flies, *Bactrocera passiflorae* and *Bactrocera xanthodes*. However, there are a number of unexplored possibilities.

In Australia, where the major pest species is the native Queensland fruit fly *Bactrocera tryoni*, only *Fopius arisanus* has become established, but with negligible effect.

Clearly some host fruit flies are far more susceptible than others to the particular parasitoids that happen to be available. In addition, the parasitoids often interact with each other when present in the same fruit fly larva. Thus *Fopius arisanus* can prevent the development of *Fopius vandenboschi* and *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* in the oriental fruit fly larva housing them; and none of the three species can develop in melon fly larvae. Detailed studies of the biology, behaviour and host-parasitoid relationships are thus clearly essential if maximum success is to be achieved from attempts to establish exotic parasitoids against native fruit flies in the oceanic Pacific, since possible mismatches would diminish the chances of establishment.

All southwest Pacific nations and Australia are seriously threatened by the relatively recent intrusion into the region of the melon fly *Bactrocera cucurbitae*, first into Papua New Guinea and then into Solomon Is, Nauru and Christmas Is (Kiribati), although it appears to have been eradicated recently from Christmas Is. Its presence is menacing, since immature adults are known to disperse widely and even up to at least 265 km over water. No fruit fly attack has yet been recorded in many susceptible cucurbit hosts that occur in the threatened areas. In order to reduce the rate of spread by lowering melon fly populations in the known infested areas, it is imperative that at least *Psyttalia fletcheri*, the most effective parasitoid so far known, be introduced to Solomon Is and Papua New
Guinea. Efficient artificial dispersal of this parasitoid to keep up with that of the melon fly will also contribute to minimising damage in invaded areas. Other natural enemies (such as *Fopius skinneri* and appropriate strains of *Diachasmimorpha dacusii*) should also be considered. However, as a priority, parasitoids attacking melon flies infesting cultivated cucurbits should be investigated in the geographical centre of origin of this fly in the Indo-Malaysian region. The eradication of melon fly from Nauru should also be seriously considered.

1. **Introduction**

Flies of the family Tephritidae rank highly as major pests of many fruits and vegetables in much of the tropical and subtropical world, including the oceanic Pacific. Although home growers often use sound parts of infested fruit and vegetables after trimming, infested produce is usually unacceptable for home marketing, and it is rigorously banned by most importing countries. Losses may thus be due not only to crop damage and the cost of control measures but also to the restriction or loss of export markets. For many years most major importing countries have demanded that produce be free from viable eggs and living fruit fly larvae and this was formerly achieved by fumigation with methyl bromide or ethylene dibromide. However, these treatments are now viewed as unacceptable because of possible health risks from bromide residues in the treated produce. Other methods, mostly involving heat or cold, have been adopted or are under investigation, although difficulties are being experienced in achieving disinfestation without damage to some commodities.

Much effort has been invested in examining the possibility of eradication, using mass liberations of sterile males, poisoned protein baits for both males and females, poisoned lures for males and relatively persistent contact insecticides (some with systemic effects) applied to the surface of the produce requiring protection. Concern for risks to non-target species has led to the testing in Hawaii of continuing mass releases of parasitoids. This latter approach is intended for population suppression and not eradication and would be far too costly for most Pacific island nations to consider for routine control purposes.

Eradication has been achieved of several species over limited areas, but there have been many failures. The costs have generally been very high and the successes have, of course, involved the continuing need to protect the cleared area against re-infestation. When properly applied, various insecticidal measures are effective in protecting much or all of the crop, but they are expensive and some may involve application and residue problems. Poisoned protein baits are probably the most useful means of control available. Bagging is a non-insecticidal method that is effective, but very laborious and applicable only to easily accessible crops.

To add to exporting difficulties New Zealand, a fruit fly free country which is an important market for Pacific island nations, has stiffened its import restrictions to the point of requiring that produce should not contain even dead fruit fly eggs or larvae above a specified very low level (Baker et al. 1990). In practice, this means that produce for export must be uninfested when exposed by an exporting country to an effective commodity treatment. This requirement adds a strong incentive for countries to maintain populations of pest fruit flies at as low a level as possible. It is thus timely to consider whether biological control might play an important role in achieving this objective. At best, biological control will only lead to a substantial lowering of the population of a fruit fly species and not to its eradication. However, it is known that a substantial lowering of the fly population may lead to less-preferred hosts completely escaping attack (Clausen et al. 1965) and to a lower level of attack even on preferred hosts. Both effects should decrease the chances that dead eggs or larvae would occur in export produce. However, even if there are no other benefits, the traditional farmer would at least benefit, since less of his crop would require trimming or discarding.
This argument assumes that both the population density of the pest species and the number of hosts infested would be reduced. The lowering of infestation would, of course, have to be ‘worthwhile’ for biological control to be considered a success. Biological control programs are reported to have had effects on the populations of individual species ranging from major to very minor. Many natural enemies collected and imported into new countries have never been released. Some that have been released were never recovered from the field and others were recovered over a brief period but did not become established. The current level of effectiveness of most of the few parasitoids that are firmly established is, unfortunately, not known at all accurately. The time is ripe for a re-examination of the entire scenario.

2. Fruit flies in the oceanic Pacific

Information on natural enemies is now presented below that may be relevant to the biological control of fruit flies occurring in the oceanic Pacific, on previous attempts at biological control of relevant species and on the outcome of these attempts.

Throughout the world some 4,000 fruit fly species have been described in the family Tephritidae. The larvae of most develop in the fruiting bodies of plants, including those of many agriculturally important fruits and vegetables. About 150 species (including some 20 of major importance) are known to attack fruits that are either grown commercially or harvested from the wild (White and Elson-Harris 1992). The area of origin of introduced pest species (or of the nearest overseas relatives of native pest species in the Pacific) provides a valuable indication of the regions of the world where biological control agents might be sought.

Three pest genera occur in the oceanic Pacific (Drew 1989):

(a) *Bactrocera* (formerly included in the genus *Dacus*), most species of which are native to tropical Asia, Papua New Guinea, Australia and the south Pacific. A small number occur in Africa and warmer areas of Europe. The native hosts of most are tropical forest fruits, although a few, including members of the subgenus *Zeugodacus*, are almost exclusively associated with the fruits and flowers of Cucurbitaceae.

(b) *Dacus*, most species of which are native to Africa and breed in the flowers and fruits of Cucurbitaceae or in the pods of Asclepiadaceae. A single species (*D. solomonensis*, known only from Solomon Is and Bougainville Is) is of importance in the oceanic Pacific.

(c) *Ceratitis*, most species of which are native to tropical Africa, where they attack a wide range of fruits. Only one species (the Mediterranean fruit fly, *C. capitata*) which is present in the Hawaiian Is is established in the oceanic Pacific. Although Hawaii is outside the region of special concern to this account, the Mediterranean fruit fly poses a significant quarantine threat to other islands of the Pacific.

Drew (1989) has reviewed the 290 species of the genera *Bactrocera* (with 21 subgenera) and *Dacus* (with 4 subgenera) that occur in the region east of the Sulawesi and south of the equator, extending eastwards to the Society Is in French Polynesia. Representatives of these genera are absent from Easter Is, New Zealand and Norfolk Is, but present in most other places where there is a continuous supply of suitable hosts.

About a quarter of the 290 species occur in Australia and slightly over half in mainland Papua New Guinea and its major islands lying to the east (New Britain, New Ireland, Bougainville). About one fifth (57 species) occur in the southern Pacific (table 2.1). Where species are members of a closely related complex within a subgenus this is noted as it may be a relevant indicator when searching for useful parasitoids. Thirty four of these 56 species occur only in the southern Pacific with 29 of the 56 in Solomon Is, 10 each in Vanuatu and New Caledonia, 6 in Western Samoa and Tonga, 4 in American Samoa and Nauru, 3 in Fiji, French Polynesia and Niue and 2 in Cook Is.
Table 2.1  Fruit flies recorded in the oceanic south Pacific (mostly after Drew 1989).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Location</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>Bactrocera (Afroacatus) aenigmatica</em></td>
<td>W. Samoa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (A.) minua</em></td>
<td>Vanuatu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>anthracina</strong> complex</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (Bactrocera) aterrima</em></td>
<td>Bougainville Is, Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bryoniae</strong> complex</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) epicharis</em></td>
<td>Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) quadririsetosa</em></td>
<td>Vanuatu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) simulata</em></td>
<td>Bougainville Is, Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) varipes</em></td>
<td>Vanuatu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>distincta</strong> complex</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) anomala</em></td>
<td>Vanuatu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) decumana</em></td>
<td>Bougainville Is, Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) distincta</em></td>
<td>Fiji, Tonga, A. Samoa, W. Samoa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) unifasciata</em></td>
<td>Vanuatu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>dorsalis</strong> complex</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) dorsalis</em></td>
<td>Nauru</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>frauenfeldi</strong> complex</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) caledoniensis</em></td>
<td>New Caledonia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) frauenfeldi</em></td>
<td>Australia, PNG, Solomon Is, Kiribati, Kosrae, Nauru</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) trilineola</em></td>
<td>Vanuatu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>musae</strong> complex</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) musae</em></td>
<td>Australia, PNG, Bismarck</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Archipelago, Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>recurrens</strong> complex</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) redunca</em></td>
<td>Bougainville Is, Torres St</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Solomon Is, Vanuatu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>silvicola</strong> complex</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) turneri</em></td>
<td>Torres St, PNG, Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>tryoni</strong> complex</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) tryoni</em></td>
<td>Australia, Lord Howe Is, New Caledonia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>French Polynesia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Species not placed in complexes</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) aithogaster</em></td>
<td>Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) atra</em></td>
<td>Austral Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) biarcurata</em></td>
<td>PNG, Bougainville Is, Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) curvipennis</em></td>
<td>New Caledonia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) ebena</em></td>
<td>Vanuatu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) enochra</em></td>
<td>New Caledonia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) facialis</em></td>
<td>Bougainville Is, Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) froggatti</em></td>
<td>Tonga</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) furvescens</em></td>
<td>Bougainville, Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) honiarae</em></td>
<td>PNG, Solomon is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) kirki</em></td>
<td>Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) longicornis</em></td>
<td>Tonga, A. Samoa, W. Samoa, Niue, Tahiti, Austral Is.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) luteola</em></td>
<td>New Ireland, Bougainville Is, Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) melanogaster</em></td>
<td>Society Is, Tuamotu Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) melanotus</em></td>
<td>Bougainville Is, Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) morula</em></td>
<td>Cook Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. (B.) mucronis</em></td>
<td>Solomon Is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>New Caledonia</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued on next page)
Species | Location
--- | ---
B. (B.) neonigrita | New Britain, New Ireland, Bougainville Is, Solomon Is
B. (B.) obscura | American Samoa, W. Samoa, Tonga, Niue
B. (B.) passiflorae | Fiji, Niue, Tonga (northern islands only), Tuvalu
B. (B.) penefurva | PNG, Solomon Is
B. (B.) pepsisai | Bougainville Is, Solomon Is
B. (B.) perfiusca | Marquesas
B. (B.) picea | Bougainville Is, Solomon Is
B. (B.) pepisalae | New Caledonia
B. (B.) psidii | W. Samoa
B. (B.) samoae | Henderson Is (Pitcairn Is)
B. (B.) setinervis | SE Asia, Indonesia, PNG + Is
B. (B.) umbrosa | Solomon Is, Vanuatu, New Caledonia
B. (B.) unipunctata | Solomon Is
B. (Notodacus) xanthodes | Fiji, Niue, A. Samoa, W. Samoa, Tonga, Cook Is, Nauru (Vanuatu)
B. (Polistomimetes) pagdeni | Solomon Is
B. (Sinodacus) aneuvittata | New Caledonia
B. (S.) perpusilla | New Caledonia
B. (S.) striigfinis | Australia, PNG, Moluccas, Torres St., Solomon Is
B. (Zeugodacus) cucurbitae | SE Asia, PNG, Solomon Is, Nauru
B. (Z.) fulvifacies | New Caledonia
B. (Z.) gracilis | Vanuatu
Dacus (Callantra) solomonensis | Bougainville Is, Solomon Is

Most (39) of the 57 species listed in Table 2.1 have not been recorded from agriculturally important fruit or vegetables, although further sampling will doubtless add to the number of species occasionally attacking commercial hosts. Indeed the hosts of most species are unknown and are presumably endemic fruits. Studies that are currently in progress under Food and Agriculture Organisation/United Nations Development Programme/Australian International Development Assistance Bureau/South Pacific Commission and Australian Centre for International Agricultural Research projects will undoubtedly provide much valuable information on species present and on their abundance and economic significance. Many species are still restricted to the single island group where they are endemic, although a few of the economically important species appear to have extended their range in comparatively recent times.

The distribution and importance of the 18 species of actual or potential economic significance is shown in Table 2.2 and illustrated in Figures 2.1 to 2.5 (pages 4 to 8). The recent trapping of Bactrocera dorsalis on Nauru (B.S. Fletcher pers. comm. 1992) is worrying since, if it indeed proves to be capable of infesting commercial fruit, it would be the first extension of this major pest species into the south Pacific. The question mark in Table 2.2 against Bactrocera xanthodes in Vanuatu indicates specimens recorded as having been bred from Barringtonia edulis. This fruit is indeed host to an undescribed tephritid (not a dacine) which has also been reared from citrus, but there is no other record of B. xanthodes. Furthermore, constant trapping has never attracted B. xanthodes which responds to methyl eugenol lures (R. Weller pers. comm. 1990). The ratings for importance have been assigned by relevant authorities for each country. In some cases, the damage currently caused in a country is not major, although it would probably become so if availability of hosts were increased by additional plantings. The major concern at present relates to the cost and effectiveness of measures that have to be taken to meet export standards of freedom from fruit fly infestation.
Table 2.2  Economically important fruit flies in the oceanic Pacific.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Bactrocera cucurbitae</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. curvipes</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. distincta</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. dorsalis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. fascia</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. frauenfeldi</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. froggatti</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. kirkii</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. melanotus</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. musca</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. passiflora</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. psidii</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. simulata</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. tryoni</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. umbrosa</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. xanthodes</td>
<td>++</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dacus solomonensis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
3. Biology of pest species

(a) General features

As far as known the life cycles of the Pacific species are quite similar. The females insert their eggs directly into the host fruit or vegetable. There are three larval instars and a prepupal stage, followed by pupation within the host (rarely) or near the surface of the ground beneath a host plant (commonly). Adults require a regular supply of water and carbohydrate to survive and protein to attain sexual maturity and develop eggs. Bacteria on the surface of the plant are an important source of nutrients (Drew and Lloyd 1989). Mating is necessary for the production of viable eggs.

As soon as the cuticle of the newly emerged adult has fully hardened and darkened, many species enter a dispersive phase, which may last a week before the completion of reproductive maturity. The presence of hosts during this period appears to have little influence on their movement, so that most adults leave the site where they emerged and disperse throughout the surrounding area, even if this involves flight through country without suitable hosts or even over open water. When these highly mobile adult flies approach maturity they start to seek appropriate ripening fruits or vegetables in which to oviposit. When they find a suitable host tree with fruit their behaviour changes. They remain on or near it and mate, typically at dusk, but at other times in some species. When host fruit disappear, or become unsuitable for oviposition, females again disperse in search of new hosts.

The important pest species pass through one generation after another throughout the year, as long as hosts are available and the temperature does not fall too low. In the latter event, the adults seek out sheltered refuges where they remain relatively inactive until temperatures rise again. Meanwhile they may search for food nearby if temperatures rise briefly above their activity threshold. There does not appear to be a true diapause. The major pest species are polyphagous, infesting many hosts. However some pest species are oligophagous, having a more restricted host range, with the majority of hosts belonging to a single plant family.

Adults of the polyphagous pest species may live for many months and produce up to 500 or more eggs. The number of eggs laid per fruit seems to be influenced by the size of the host fruit. Species that, in their native state, utilise small fruits deposit one egg per fruit and then mark it with a pheromone to deter further oviposition. Species that infest larger fruits, or a variety of fruit sizes, lay larger numbers of eggs and some have a capacity for adjusting egg numbers according to fruit size. There is no evidence of a marking pheromone in the major pest species attacking larger fruits, and multiple ovipositions by different females may occur in the same fruit and often into the same oviposition puncture. Once larvae start to feed, a so-far-unidentified change occurs in the fruit which generally causes females to avoid it.

There are considerable differences between species in the speed of both egg and larval development, relative to the duration of the entire life cycle. In order to highlight the differences Carey (1989) and Carey et al. (1985) divide the life cycle into pre-adult (egg, larva and pupa) and adult stages. When conditions are favourable, for every melon fly *Bactrocera cucurbitae* adult there are 6 pre-adult stages, whereas for every oriental fruit fly *B. dorsalis* or Mediterranean fruit fly *Ceratitis capitata* adult there are 32 pre-adults. Only 43% (% eggs + % larvae) of *B. cucurbitae* populations are inside a host at any one time, but from 70 to 86% of the populations of the other species. A major reason for the low percentage of *B. cucurbitae* population in the egg and larval stages is the rapid development time from egg to pupation (5 days in zucchini) relative to the duration of its entire life (220 days) (Carey 1989). However the influence of factors such as these on the impact of parasitoids on fruit fly abundance is not yet clear. In addition, the figures apply only to the special case of populations with stable age distributions, that is to say rapidly expanding populations that are increasing at their innate capacity for increase, unlimited by shortage of resources and without immigration or emigration. It is entirely possible that, on occasion, young, rapidly expanding populations of *B. cucurbitae* will have higher proportions of pre-adults than aged and declining populations of *B. dorsalis* or *C. capitata*. 
The males of many species are strongly attracted to specific chemical compounds known as male lures. Three such lures are relevant in our area of special concern: methyl eugenol which occurs naturally in the essential oils of a number of plants and two synthetics, cue lure (4- (p-acetoxyphenyl) butan-2-one) and Willison's lure, its hydroxy derivative (4-(p-hydroxyphenyl) butan-2-one). Male lures can be used to monitor presence or absence of males of reacting species and to provide an indication of levels of abundance. When incorporated in traps or in poisoned baits, they are powerful means of area control of some species. Females are seldom attracted unless the population of males has been reduced to a very low level.

(b) Features of the pest species

Some of the relevant features of the pest species listed in Table 2.2 are dealt with below, briefly except for those of the melon fly, which is currently attracting special attention because of its potential to spread to new countries. Records of the main commercial hosts that are attacked are taken mainly from Bateman (1988), Drew (1989) and White and Elson-Harris (1992). Additional records of many non-commercial hosts are given in Drew (1989) and from outside the Pacific by White and Elson-Harris (1992). The host lists will undoubtedly be considerably expanded and old records critically assessed by the current SPC/FAO/UNDP/ACIAR fruit fly projects. Little is known about the biology of the less important species, but knowledge of this aspect is also certain to expand greatly as a result of the foregoing projects.

**Bactrocera cucurbitae** (Fig. 2.1)

Males respond to cue lure

The melon fly is very widely distributed. In Asia it occurs in Iran (first recorded 1989), Pakistan, India, Sri Lanka, Nepal, Bangladesh, Myanmar, Thailand, Vietnam, Cambodia, Laos, Malaysia, Singapore, Brunei, Indonesia, Philippines, south China and Taiwan. It is native to the central portion of this region but little is known of its wild hosts there. It was first reported in Japan in 1919 (Shiga 1989) but, using sterile males, it was eradicated from Kume Is in 1979, Miyako in 1987 (Iwahashi 1977, Shiga 1989), Daito in 1989 and Okinawa in 1990 (Kawasaki 1991). It now occurs only in the Yaeyama Is, where sterile insect releases commenced in 1990 and are hoped to result in eradication by 1993. In the western Pacific it occurs in Irian Jaya, mainland Papua New Guinea, New Britain, New Ireland, Lihir Is, Bougainville Is, western Solomon Is, Nauru (1982) and, was present for a period in the mid eighties in Kiritimati Is (Kiribati). It was discovered in 1984 in the Shortland Is group of Solomon Is. Eradication was attempted (Eta 1986) but this was unsuccessful and it is now known also from Choiseul and Kolombangara. In 1988 it was found in Santa Isabel Is and, in 1991, throughout Western and Isabel Provinces, which represent about 45% of the total land area of Solomon Is. No melon fly has yet been detected in other Provinces (C. Eta pers. comm. 1992). Melon fly is present in Hawaii and occurred as a serious pest in Guam and some of the other Mariana Is (Rota, Tinian, Saipan) until eradicated from Rota, Tinian and Saipan using sterile males (Mitchell 1980). However it has reappeared as a serious pest in these islands following reintroduction from Guam during a typhoon. It occurs in the Indian Ocean in Mauritius and Réunion and in Africa in Egypt, Kenya and Tanzania. In North America it has been trapped in California, but successfully eradicated (Spaugy 1988).

The melon fly is one of the world's most active and serious fruit fly pests and the most important fruit fly pest of vegetables, especially of cucurbit crops. It has been recorded from more than 125 hosts, including members of a number of plant families other than the Cucurbitaceae. In Solomon Is it attacks cucumber, pumpkin, snake gourd and watermelon (Bateman 1988). In Hawaii it is a serious pest of watermelon, cantaloupe, pumpkin, squash, cucumber, tomato, capsicum, beans and passion fruit.
Pest fruitflies (Harris and Lee 1989). At times it attacks cucurbit flowers and leaf stalks and stems of young plants (Clausen 1978b, Kapoor 1989). However, the varieties of avocado and banana grown in Hawaii are not attacked up to harvesting stage and pineapple has been shown to be an unsuitable host (Armstrong 1983, Armstrong et al. 1979, 1983, Armstrong and Vargas 1982).

Because it is attacked by more parasitoid species in India than elsewhere, Nishida (1963) postulated that to be the centre of origin of the melon fly. Moreover its general level of abundance was lower than in Hawaii. He expressed surprise to find that watermelon, cantaloupe and gourds could be grown at times without control measures, damage mostly occurring in localised areas. Lawrence (1950) also reported that its abundance was so low, particularly in the cool season, that the melon fly was not as serious a pest in India as in many other countries. In Pakistan less than half of cucurbits are generally infested (Syed 1971). Nevertheless Kapoor (1989) reports from India that it infests more than half of all vegetables and is active except for a short period during the coldest months. Its population expands when rainfall is adequate and contracts during dry periods (Nishida 1963). In Luzon (Philippines) melon fly damage ranges from 5 to 40% in cucurbits, tomato and eggplant (Iral et al. 1987).

After a preoviposition period of some 11 or 12 days, mating takes place at dusk. During oviposition the female punctures the plant tissue and inserts 1 to 40 relatively large eggs. Females do not use a marking pheromone, so repeated ovipositions may occur in the same host and even in the same oviposition puncture. Hatching time is short (a little over 24 hours) and larval and pupal stages cover 4 to 17 days and 7 to 13 days respectively. The length of larval life depends upon the temperature and on the host in which development occurs (Carey et al. 1985), being longer in thick-skinned hosts, such as pumpkin. Adults may be long-lived, normally up to 150 days, but under cool conditions 240 to 460 days. A female may lay more than 1000 eggs (Carey 1989, Carey et al. 1985, Clausen 1978b, Nishida and Bess 1957, Severin et al. 1914, Vargas et al. 1984). Larvae have been observed to leave one fruit and enter another close by (Bateman 1972).

Nishida and Bess (1957) observed that, shortly after emergence, adults left the areas where they were produced and were capable of very long dispersal flights. Steiner et al. (1962) recorded up to 65 km in the Marianas and Kawai et al. (1978) 34 to 56 km in Japan. The longest flight so far detected is about 265 km from Kikaijima Is to Tanegashima Is (Japan) (Kamiwada and Tanaka 1991). This capacity for long flights over water underlines the serious threat of dispersal to additional islands in the Solomons group and also from Papua New Guinea to the Australian mainland, just 150 km distant.

On a local scale, Nishida and Bess (1957) in Hawaii observed that, after dispersal, female melon flies move into cucurbit fields during the day to oviposit, returning to the surrounding vegetation before nightfall. There are peaks of oviposition in the morning and late afternoon.

Many papers on the ecology, behaviour and other aspects of the melon fly are listed in White and Elson-Harris (1992) and Syed (1971) deals with its natural enemies in Pakistan. Techniques for mass rearing are provided by Kakinohana and Yamagishi (1991) and Tokunaga et al. (1991).

**Bactrocera curvipennis** (Fig. 2.5)
Males respond to cue lure
This species has been bred from mandarins and other citrus in New Caledonia, where it is also recorded from grapes, guava, papaya and peach (Cochereau 1966a, Risbec 1942). It has also been reported earlier from Vanuatu, although it was not reared or trapped there during a survey conducted by the Department of Agriculture in the 1980s (R. Weller pers. comm. 1989). Its parasitoids are dealt with in records for New Caledonia (see section 4(i)).

**Bactrocera distincta** (Fig. 2.4)
Males respond to cue and Willison's lures
This species is abundant and widespread in Fiji, American and Western Samoa and Tonga, but the only commercial host from which it has been reared is sapodilla.
Bactrocera facialis (Fig. 2.5)
Males respond to cue lure
This potentially serious pest is known only from throughout the Tongan group of islands where it infests a range of fruits and vegetables including capsicum, citrus, guava, mango and especially tomato.

Bactrocera frauenfeldi (Fig. 2.2)
Males respond to cue and Willison's lures
This is a member of a complex of four species (B. caledoniensis, B. frauenfeldi, B. parafrauenfeldi, B. trilineola) which occur in parts of the region extending from northern Australia to New Caledonia. It was established in north Queensland in 1972. It occurs in large populations from Cape York (Queensland) to Papua New Guinea, including 15 of the Torres Strait islands. It is also known from the Bismarck Archipelago, Bougainville Is, Solomon Is, Stuart Is, Nauru and Kiribati (Drew 1989, G.S. Sandhu pers. comm. 1990). It also occurs in Micronesia, in the Federated States of Micronesia (Pohnpei, Chuuk, Kosrae, Yap), Marshall Is and Palau, but not in Guam. Although it is sometimes known as the mango fly it will also attack breadfruit, banana, citrus, guava, malay apple and papaya. It is common in papaya in Solomon Is where it and B. cucurbitae are the two most important species (C.H. Williams pers. comm. 1989). In Tarawa (Kiribati) it infests breadfruit and guava (G.S. Sandhu pers. comm. 1990). This is a very abundant species which is likely to increase further in importance if favoured host plants are planted in greater numbers (Drew 1978).

Bactrocera froggatti
Males respond to methyl eugenol
This apparently minor species is known from Solomon Is (Banika, Guadalcanal, Gizo, Russell, Shortland) and from Bougainville Is. It has been bred from mango.

Bactrocera kirki (Fig. 2.3)
Males respond to cue and Willison's lures
This species is widespread in the Pacific, occurring in French Polynesia (Austral Is and Tahiti) Niue, American and Western Samoa and Tonga. It has been bred from capsicum, citrus, guava, malay apple, mango, passionfruit, peach and starfruit.

Bactrocera melanotus (Fig. 2.4)
Males respond to cue lure
This species has been recorded only from Cook Is (Rarotonga, Aitutaki. Mangaia, Mauke) where it is a serious pest of citrus and also infests avocado, guava, mango and papaya. It is believed to mate in the morning.

Bactrocera musae (Fig. 2.4)
Males respond to methyl eugenol
The banana fruit fly is one of a complex of three species (B. bancroftii, B. musae, B. prolixa) occupying part or all of the region extending from coastal Queensland through the Torres Strait islands to Papua New Guinea, Bismarck Archipelago to the Solomon Is. B. musae occupies all of this range. It is a major pest of bananas in northern Queensland, and of cooking and ripe bananas in Papua New Guinea (F. Dori pers. comm. 1992).

The banana fruit fly has several generations a year. Females oviposit in both ripe and green bananas and may even sting young fruit as it appears on the bunch (Drew 1989). It also attacks guava and papaya. Females lay 7 to 12 eggs per fruit and hatching may be delayed for 7 to 10 days if the fruit is not ripe enough (Smith 1977). Fletcher (1989) postulates that the evolution of this mechanism permits females to lay in fruit in different stages of ripeness within a single bunch of bananas that might be discovered, before dispersing in search of other fruiting trees scattered widely within the rainforest.
**Bactrocera passiflorae** (Fig. 2.1)
Males respond to cue lure
The Fijian fruit fly occurs in Fiji, Niuatoputapu and Niuafo’ou Is of northern Tonga, and Niue, where it is known from citrus, granadilla, guava, mango and passionfruit. There are also unconfirmed records from breadfruit, eggplant and papaya. Parasitoids attacking it are dealt with in the section on Fiji (4(d)) and life cycle details are provided by Simmonds (1936).

**Bactrocera psidii** (Fig. 2.5)
Males respond to cue and Willison’s lures
This species is known only from New Caledonia where it is an important pest. It has been reared from citrus, granadilla, guava and mango. Its parasitoids are dealt with in the section on New Caledonia (4(i)).

**Bactrocera simulata** (Fig. 2.5)
Males respond to cue and Willison’s lures
This species is a minor pest in Papua New Guinea, Solomon Is and Vanuatu. It attacks chillis in Santa Cruz Is in the eastern Solomons (R. Macfarlane pers. comm. 1992).

**Bactrocera trilineola** (Fig. 2.2)
Males respond to cue and Willison’s lures
This species is restricted to Vanuatu (Efate, Malekula, Espiritu Santo) where it is one of the two major species, the other being *B. umbrosa*. It has been reared from avocado, breadfruit, citrus (orange and pomelo), guava, mango and papaya.

**Bactrocera tryoni** (Fig. 2.1; Plate 1, Fig. 1)
Males respond to cue and Willison’s lures
The Queensland fruit fly is native to eastern Australia and now occurs also in Lord Howe Is, New Caledonia, Austrl Is (first recorded 1977) and a number of the islands in French Polynesia (eg Tahiti, Bora Bora). It has been recorded from Papua New Guinea, but is not established there and it has been eradicated from Easter Is (Bateman and Arretz 1973). *B. tryoni* is the most destructive pest of fruit and vegetable crops in tropical, subtropical and temperate eastern Australia. It infests many vegetables and all commercial fruit crops in eastern Australia except pineapples. It has been recorded from more than 100 hosts in Queensland alone and probably occurs in many more. Many of its hosts are wild plants which are responsible for permitting the development of very large populations particularly in forest areas (Drew 1978). Its life cycle, ecology, economic importance and control are the subject of many publications (e.g. Bateman 1968, 1977, Drew 1989, Fletcher 1987, 1989).

**Bactrocera umbrosa** (Fig. 2.3)
Males respond to methyl eugenol
This widespread species occurs throughout Southeast Asia where it attacks jackfruit, cempedak and custard apple. In Micronesia it is known from Palau and in the south Pacific from Papua New Guinea, Bismarck Archipelago, Bougainville Is, Solomon Is, Vanuatu and New Caledonia. It occurs in very large populations in lowland areas, particularly in disturbed situations. In the Pacific it has been reared from breadfruit and citrus and it is also known from jackfruit. Yukawa (1984) reports that it is a serious pest of breadfruit and jackfruit in Indonesia and Yunus and Ho (1980) that it breeds in cempedak in Malaysia. It is said to infest *Momordica charantia* in Kalimantan. Balthazar (1966) has recorded the braconid wasp *Phaenocarpa (Asobara) bactrocerae* from *B. umbrosa* in the Philippines but this wasp is a parasitoid of drosophilid larvae, which must have been present also.
**Bactrocera xanthodes** (Fig. 2.2)

Males respond to methyl eugenol

This important pest species (or group of species) occurs in Cook Is (Rarotonga, Aitutaki, Mangaia), Fiji, Nauru, Niue, American and Western Samoa, Tonga (except in the extreme north) and Vanuatu. Its host range in Cook Is is similar to that in Tonga, but different from that in Fiji and different again in Vanuatu. This suggests that closer examination may reveal at least three morphologically similar species. It was first recorded on Niue in the 1970s from granadilla and recently collected again after Cyclone Ofa (SPC 1990). Its hosts include breadfruit, jackfruit, mango, papaya and watermelon. It is considered as a potentially very serious pest. A 1986 record of *B. xanthodes* breeding in *Barringtonia edulis* in Vanuatu requires confirmation (specimens are in the DSIR Collection in Auckland) and, if correct, could indicate a recent introduction of economic significance (R. Weller pers. comm. 1989). Some details of its biology are given by Simmonds (1936). Parasitoids have not so far been reared from *B. xanthodes* in the current SPC/FAO/ACIAR fruit fly projects (A. Allwood pers. comm. 1992).

**Dacus solomonensis**

Males respond to cue lure

This species is known only from Bougainville Is and Solomon Is. It has been bred in the latter from cucumber and pumpkin and occasionally causes severe damage to snake gourd on Guadalcanal (C. Williams pers. comm. 1989).

4. Natural enemies and biological control

Since more has been learnt about natural enemies of fruitflies and their use in biological control from the extensive programs in Hawaii than anywhere else in the world, the experiences there will be dealt with first, followed by other countries in alphabetical order.

(a) **HAWAII**

Four pest fruit flies have been introduced to Hawaii, the melon fly *Bactrocera cucurbitae* (1895), the Mediterranean fruit fly *Ceratitis capitata* (1910) and the oriental fruit fly *Bactrocera dorsalis* (1946): in 1983 the less important *B. latifrons* was discovered attacking Solanaceae on Oahu.

Many papers have been written on the very large biological control programs conducted against the first three species and many aspects are well summarised by Clausen (1978b) and Clausen et al. (1965). The following is a brief account of the main results. The preferred names for many of the natural enemies differ from those used in the early papers and are shown in table 2.16. These have been adopted following the work of Beardsley (1989), Boucek and Narendran (1981), and particularly Wharton (1987, 1988, 1989a) and Wharton and Gilstrap (1983).

Biological control investigations, aimed at *Ceratitis capitata* in particular, commenced in 1912. These led to the introduction and establishment of the parasitic wasps *Psyttalia concolor* from South Africa, *Dirhinus anthracina* from West Africa and *Diachasmimorpha tryoni* from Australia. In 1914 *Biosteres fullawayi* and *Tetrastichus giffardianus* from West Africa were introduced, but apparently not successfully established.

By 1915 *Psyttalia concolor* had attained a high percentage parasitisation, but this species was replaced from 1916 onwards by *Diachasmimorpha tryoni*. Pemberton and Willard (1918) showed that *Psyttalia concolor* larvae were almost always destroyed by *Diachasmimorpha tryoni* or *Biosteres fullawayi* when they occurred together in the same host. The percentage parasitisation of Mediterranean fruit fly larvae in coffee berries, with their shallow pulp, ranged from 45.9 to 94.4, but was much lower in fruit with a thicker pulp, yearly averages over a 10 year period ranging from 4.0 to 23.1 in guava, 5.7 to 24.8 in mango and 3.5 to 12.8 in orange.
A larval parasitoid *Psyttalia fletcheri*, found attacking *Bactrocera cucurbitae* in India, Sri Lanka, Malaysia and Indonesia, was introduced from India and established in 1915-16 (see later). The discovery of the oriental fruit fly in Hawaii in 1946 immediately led to a massive program of search for, and importation of, parasitoids. This involved 14 field collectors, lasted some five years and embraced all of the major tropical and subtropical regions of the world where fruit flies occur. About 4.3 million puparia of more than 60 species of fruit fly yielded some 30 species of parasitoid, the majority belonging to the genera *Biosteres*, *Diachasmimorpha*, *Fopius* or *Psyttalia*. Insectary rearing in Hawaii provided more than 1.1 million adults for release during 1947-53 and a further 2.3 million during 1954-62 (Clausen et al. 1965). Seven species or varieties became established on the oriental fruit fly, namely *Fopius arisanus*, *F. vandenboschi*, *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* var. *malaiensis*, var. *novocaledonicus* and var. *taiensis*, *Psyttalia incisi* and *Aceratoneuromyia indica*.

*Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* var. *malaiensis* became abundant in 1948-49, but was rapidly replaced by *Fopius vandenboschi* which, in turn, was superseded by *Fopius arisanus*. Thereafter, *F. arisanus* dominated the scene, producing about 70% parasitisation of *Bactrocera dorsalis* in guava, the main reservoir of this species (Bess 1953, Bess et al. 1961). The underlying causes for this sequence of events have been convincingly demonstrated by van den Bosch and Haramoto (1953). Eggs of *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* were inhibited in their development in hosts that contained either *F. arisanus* or *F. vandenboschi*. When these two species were present in the same host, larvae of *F. arisanus* prevented those of *F. vandenboschi* from developing. When more than one larva of any one species was present, all except one larva of *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* were killed mechanically. In addition to hosts killed by the developing parasitoid larvae, many host eggs (perhaps 50%) were killed as a result of transmission of microorganisms by *Fopius arisanus* at the time of oviposition, usually increasing fruit fly mortality to more than 95%. It is interesting that a fourth species *Psyttalia incisi* is now at least as abundant as *Fopius vandenboschi* (Wong et al. 1984).

Sampling of guava showed substantially lower numbers of *Bactrocera dorsalis* larvae from 1950 onwards and several cultivated fruits (e.g. avocado, banana, papaya, persimmon), previously very heavily infested, became practically free from attack. Even infestation of mango, a favoured host fruit, declined greatly, seldom exceeding 10%. Indeed, an overall 95% reduction in both fly populations and pest damage was claimed for the decade after 1948 (Bess and Haramoto 1958, 1961, Clausen et al. 1965, Haramoto and Bess 1970). A more recent sampling of *B. dorsalis* in guava on Oahu (Chaudhry 1989) indicated 29.6 to 48.8% parasitisation. No *Ceratitis capitata* were produced from these fruits. Assuming a mortality of eggs of about 50% due to microbial infections caused by *Fopius arisanus* probing (Bess et al. 1963), these figures would equate to an overall mortality of 65 to 75%. Clearly there continues to be substantial biological control of the oriental fruit fly.

It is interesting that, under village conditions in Malaysia, mortality of *Bactrocera dorsalis* caused by parasitoids was *Fopius arisanus* 24%, *F. vandenboschi* 8.7%, *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* 3.3% and other species 0.4%. However ‘soil factors’ were responsible for most of the mortality of immature stages (Serit and Tan 1990). *Fopius arisanus* proved to be an equally effective parasitoid of the Mediterranean fruit fly which, except where coffee is growing in lowlands, has tended to become restricted to higher elevations following the introduction of the oriental fruit fly.

Without wishing to play down the importance of *F. arisanus*, it should be pointed out that most sampling programs are biased in its favour. This is because, as soon as fruit are collected, the last bit of opportunity is removed for parasitoids of larvae to attack additional hosts.
Attempts at biological control of the melon fly *Bactrocera cucurbitae* are now dealt with in somewhat greater detail, because of serious concern that it will, if unchecked, spread into the southwestern Pacific and Australia.

The melon fly is native to the Indo-Malaysian region and occurs throughout Southeast Asia, southern China and Taiwan. It invaded Hawaii in 1895, Guam in 1936 and, in more recent times, it has spread to Papua New Guinea (1980) and the northwestern part of Solomon Is (1984) where it is now present throughout the Western and Isabel Provinces. It is recorded from Nauru (1982) and also become established briefly in Kiritimati Is (Kiribati), being first recorded in 1987. It attacks more than 80 types of vegetables and fruits, the most important from an economic point of view being various cultivated cucurbit and tomatoes. Favoured non-economic hosts are wild melons of the genus *Momordica*, of which up to 100% may be infested. Where melon fly does not occur in the Pacific, cucurbits are often free, or substantially free, from fruit fly attack. However *Dacus solomonensis*, known only from Solomon Is and Bougainville Is, attacks cucumber, pumpkin and snake gourd and, in Tonga, *Bactrocera xanthodes* occasionally attacks watermelon, particularly if the fruit surface is damaged.

Many of the parasitoids already mentioned in relation to the campaigns against the oriental and Mediterranean fruit flies were tested to determine whether they could develop successfully in the melon fly (Table 2.3, Clausen et al. 1965). It is clear that none of the most effective parasites for the other pest species were able to complete their development in *Bactrocera cucurbitae*. Eggs of *Fopius arisanus* frequently hatched, but the larvae died at an early stage, whereas the eggs of *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata*, *Fopius vandenboschi* and *Psyttalia incisi* were encapsulated by phagocytes and failed to develop (Marucci 1951, Nishida and Haramoto 1953). Contrary to the information in table 2.3, the record of *P. incisi* emerging from *Bactrocera cucurbitae* in India (Kapoor and Agarwal 1983) must indicate either (i) different strains of host or parasitoid (ii) that the parasitoid, in fact, emerged from another host in a mixed group of larvae, or (iii) a parasitoid misidentification, since *P. incisi* and *P. fletcheri* are so similar. Also, in more recent tests, 1.6% parasitisation was obtained of *B. cucurbitae* eggs by *F. arisanus*, although parasite development was unusually slow (Ramadan et al. 1992).

### Table 2.3

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Successful</th>
<th>Unsuccessful</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>BRACONIDAE</strong></td>
<td><strong>BRACONIDAE</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha albobalteatus</em></td>
<td><em>Bioterestis fullawayi</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha dacusii</em></td>
<td><em>B. giffardii</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha hageni</em></td>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha longicaudata</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psyttalia fletcheri</em></td>
<td><em>D. l. malaiensis</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psyttalia fletcheri</em></td>
<td><em>D. l. novacaledonicus</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CYNIPIDAE</strong></td>
<td><strong>CYNIPIDAE</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aganaspis daci</em></td>
<td><em>Fopius arisanus</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Fopius vandenboschi</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Psyttalia incisi</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>EULOPHIDAE</strong></td>
<td><strong>EULOPHIDAE</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aceratoneuromyia indica</em></td>
<td><em>Aceratoneuromyia indica</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Tetrastichus dacicida</em></td>
<td><em>Tetrastichus dacicida</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>T. giffardianus</em></td>
<td><em>T. giffardianus</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* only males produced
As indicated earlier, the braconid wasp *Psyttalia fletcheri*, a widespread parasitoid of melon fly in India, was introduced to Hawaii in 1916. Even in north India, parasitisation of *B. cucurbitae* by *P. fletcheri* did not exceed 3% (Nishida 1963) or 4.5% (Chaturvedi 1947) and in Borneo parasitisation of melon fly did not exceed 1% (Clausen et al. 1965). *P. fletcheri*, however, soon became established throughout Hawaii (Fullaway 1920). As part of the oriental fruit fly project it was introduced again in 1950-51, together with *Diachasmimorpha dacusii* and *D. albobalteatus*. However, neither of these latter two species became established, although both developed in the melon fly in the laboratory (Table 2.3) and both were mass reared and released over many generations (Bess et al. 1961, Clausen 1978b). Clancy (1952) recorded a few recoveries of *D. dacusii* in 1950, the year that more than 114,000 adults had been released. However about 50% of the larvae entered diapause and the species did not survive the winter (Marucci 1952). It is recorded that more *Diachasmimorpha dacusii* (383) than *Psyttalia fletcheri* (17) were reared from the same batch of fly-infested *Luffa* (Cucurbitaceae) from northern India. The actual host of *D. dacusii* is not certain, however, since the *Luffa* produced mixed populations of *Bactrocera cucurbitae*, *B. nubilus* and *Dacus ciliatus*. However the main host was assumed to be *Bactrocera cucurbitae* because of the ready propagation of *D. dacusii* on melon fly in Hawaii and because it had been reared from field collections of melon fly in Sri Lanka. *D. dacusii* was absent from summer (April to July) collections in North India, appearing only later (August to November). Neither it nor *Psyttalia fletcheri* was amongst the 488 parasitoids (Spalangia spp., *Dirhinus* spp., *Pachycerepoideus vindemlai*) emerging from 11,636 melon fly puparia collected in south India (Clausen et al. 1965). *Diachasmimorpha albobalteatus*, which also failed to establish, had been obtained only from Sabah. The original shipments received in Hawaii averaged 27.5% females, but breeding in the laboratory, only with some difficulty, produced 12% females, so its natural host may be some other fruit fly associated with melon fly in the mixed lots of puparia received in Hawaii. It oviposited readily in *Bactrocera dorsalis* and *Ceratitis capitata*, but only male progeny emerged from the latter (Clausen et al. 1965). Additional parasitoids emerging from fruit in India from which *B. cucurbitae* was produced included the chalcidids *Dirhinus himalay anus, Spalangia afr a, S. endius, S. grotiusi* and *S. stomoxysiae* (Kapoor and Agarwal 1983, Narayanan and Chawla 1962). Syed (1971) did not record *Psyttalia fletcheri* from Pakistan and found only exceedingly low levels of parasitisation of melon fly by *Psyt tallia* sp. and *Spalangia* sp.

Within a few years of its establishment in Hawaii *Psyttalia fletcheri* was causing 50% parasitisation of the melon fly in commercial crops and up to 100% in the specially-favoured wild *Momordica* melons. Indeed Fullaway (1920) reported that it was again possible to grow melons successfully, the infestation per fruit having been reduced from 4.0 to 6.5 larvae to 0.3 or fewer larvae per fruit. Under the most favourable circumstances the population of melon fly was reduced to such low levels that it virtually ceased to be a pest.

Unfortunately this happy situation deteriorated over ensuing years. Newell et al. (1952) reported maximum parasitisation of 44.1%, with mean annual figures ranging from 19.8 to 22.7% and infestations of 3.1 to 4.0 larvae per *Momordica* fruit. These infestation levels approached those existing before the introduction of *Psyttalia fletcheri*. Disappointing levels of biological control were also reported for 1951 by Nishida (1955) in cultivated vegetables and fruit. Parasitisation proved to be much lower in cultivated than in wild hosts, namely 0 to 0.1% in tomatoes in 1951, 0.2 to 6.5% in cucumber and 0 to 15.6% in melons whereas, in *Momordica* in adjacent uncultivated areas, it ranged from 20.0 to 37.8%.

The natural enemies causing melon fly mortality in Hawaii in the 1950s are shown in Table 2.4. Its eggs were attacked by *Fopius arisanus* (the major parasitoid of *Bactrocera dorsalis* and *Ceratitis capitata*), but generally only where the habitat of these species overlapped as in papaya groves (Nishida and Haramoto 1953). Although *Fopius arisanus*
cannot develop in the melon fly, it oviposits in melon fly eggs and, in so doing, kills them. In drier situations, as in cucurbit vines, eggs were taken by ants. Melon fly larvae were attacked in the host fruit by four parasitoids (in particular by *Psyttalia fletcheri*), by an earwig and by a staphylinid beetle. Ant attack occurred mainly on fully-fed larvae as they left the fruit to pupate. Pupae in the soil were attacked by three species of parasitoid, by ants and probably by mice. Adults were preyed upon by spiders and a reduviid bug. However, control of melon fly was not considered to be satisfactory.

Table 2.4 Natural enemies killing *Bactrocera cucurbitae* in Hawaii in the mid fifties (Nishida 1955).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Stage attacked</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>egg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Parasitoids</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>BRACONIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Fopius arisanus</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha dacusii</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psyttalia fletcheri</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CHALCIDIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Dirhinus anthracina</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Spalangia endius</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>S. hirta</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>EULOPIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Tetrastichus giffardianus</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>T. dacicida</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Predators</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ARAEINIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Argiope</em> spp.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CHELISOCHIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Chelisoches morio</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>REDUVIIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Zelus renardii</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>FORMICIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pheidole megacephala</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Solenopsis geminata</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>STAPHYLINIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Philonthus turbidus</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

+ rare, ++ occasional, +++ common
* adult oviposits and kills host eggs, but the parasitoid does not develop
† *P. fletcheri* must already be present in the same host for it to develop (Pemberton and Willard 1918)

It was pointed out (Nishida 1955) that changed agricultural practices had greatly decreased the amount of uncultivated land where *Momordica* grew abundantly. Earlier, the common wild melons served as a reservoir for pest and parasitoid populations alike, both of which moved into the cultivated fields. The progressive shrinking of the *Momordica* reservoir led to the cucumber fly population becoming dependent upon cultivated hosts, which are clearly not conducive to high levels of parasitisation by *Psyttalia fletcheri*.

It is probable also that the increasing use of pesticides would have been detrimental to the parasitoids. However, observations on melons and cucumbers in areas where insecticides were not used did not indicate a high level of parasitisation there either. Furthermore, low levels were already evident in earlier times when pesticide use was low, so pesticides are evidently not responsible for the general situation.
A further possibility is that *P. fletcheri* in Hawaii is now less 'fit' than it was on first introduction, perhaps as a result of a virus (or other pathogen) or a genetic change. Although there is no evidence to support this suggestion and the possibility might appear remote, there may nevertheless be justification for considering whether any introductions to Solomon Is or Papua New Guinea should be from India rather than from Hawaii. The fact that *P. fletcheri* from Hawaii, now established in Guam, is providing negligible control of *Bactrocera cucurbitae* there (see 4(f)) provides some justification for this suggestion. It should, however, be pointed out that Clausen et al. (1965) expressed surprise that only 284 adult *Psyttalia fletcheri* had been reared from at least 0.5 million *Bactrocera cucurbitae* puparia collected in north India, Sri Lanka, Malaysia and the Philippines. It was not obtained from melon fly puparia from south India, Thailand, Sabah, south China or Taiwan so, if present, its numbers must have been very low. Nevertheless, it is reported to have been introduced during 1932 to 1934 into the Ryukyu Is from Taiwan (Clausen 1978b) so it must have been present in Taiwan in reasonable numbers at that time.

The establishment of *Psyttalia fletcheri* in the Ryukyu Is is said to have led to a significant reduction in melon fly damage to cucurbits (Yashiro 1936), but later details do not appear to be available. In Sri Lanka the native *P. fletcheri* produced a maximum of 10% parasitisation of melon fly in four different cucurbit hosts and a small number of *Spalangia* species were also produced (Clausen et al. 1965). It is clear that this level of control was not considered adequate, since *Dirhinus anthracina* and *Spalangia* sp. were imported in 1936 from India and Malaysia respectively. Both became established (Hutson 1939), but their effects on the level of parasitisation of melon fly are not recorded.

The level of biological control of melon fly in Hawaii does not appear to have improved since the mid fifties and, in at least some places, it has even deteriorated. Thus, a survey of bitter melon and commercial cucurbits on the island of Molokai from 1978 to 1980 revealed heavy infestations (about 22 larvae per kg). No parasitoids were reared from over 8,000 fruits which produced 2,432 melon fly puparia. It was postulated that high winds on west Molokai where most cucurbits are grown were unfavourable to the survival of *Psyttalia fletcheri* (Harris and Lee 1989).

To sum up, the most effective natural enemy of *Bactrocera cucurbitae* so far known is *Psyttalia fletcheri* which causes a moderate level of mortality of larvae in *Momordica* melons, but only limited mortality of larvae in cultivated fruit. Of the other recorded parasitoids of melon fly, further studies of *Diachasmimorpha albobalteatus* and especially *D. dacusii* might be warranted. However higher priority should perhaps be given to a further search for additional parasitoids that are effective against the melon fly in cultivated plants within the natural range of the fly (Nishida 1955).

(b) AUSTRALIA

Of the more than 60 species of fruit flies that occur in Australia, the Queensland fruit fly, *Bactrocera tryoni* causes by far the greatest economic damage in eastern Australia (with *B. neohumeralis* in second place, but a long way behind in importance). The introduced Mediterranean fruit fly *Ceratitis capitata* is of major importance in Western Australia where, until the appearance of *B. tryoni* in 1988 (later eradicated (1990)), it has been the only fruit fly attacking commercially grown fruits. *C. capitata* was first recorded in Western Australia in 1895 but did not appear in eastern Australia until 1898. From time to time over the next 40 years it caused extensive economic damage in the east until it disappeared completely in 1941. This was possibly as a result of competitive interaction between its adults and those of *B. tryoni* for oviposition sites, combined with an inability of its larvae to compete successfully in fruits. The latter is suggested by the results of Keiser et al. (1974) who showed in the laboratory that
C. capitata larvae suffered high mortality when larvae of the oriental fruit fly were present in the same fruit. However both species emerged from the same pieces of a range of fruits in the field in Maui (Hawaii), more C. capitata than Bactrocera dorsalis emerging at higher elevations. Furthermore, in individual peach fruit, the larvae of one species caused no apparent reduction in the number of larvae of the other species (Wong et al. 1983).

Only four of the fruit fly species present in Australia also occur in the oceanic south Pacific, namely B. frauenfeldi, B. musae, B. strigifinis (all in Solomon Is) and B. tryoni (in French Polynesia, Lord Howe Is and New Caledonia). Of these, B. frauenfeldi the mango fruit fly was first recorded in the Cape York region of Australia in 1972 and is presumed not to be an endemic species.

The native parasitoids reared from many samples of mainly commercial fruits collected from 1960 to 1962 in eastern Australia north from Sydney are listed in Table 2.5 (Snowball and Lukins 1964). Five additional species had earlier been reported for Queensland (May and Kleinschmidt 1954), namely two species of Bracon (unidentified) and of Psyttalia (P. africanus, P. fijiensis) and one of Opius (O. froggatti). However their identity requires confirmation. The overall incidence of native parasitoids in the 1960 to 1962 rearings was low, generally averaging between 5 and 12% of the insects emerging from all samples at any one site, although it did rise to 80% in one individual sample. The conclusion reached was that native parasitoids were of little importance in regulating the abundance of their fruit fly hosts (Snowball 1966).

Table 2.5 Native parasitoids of fruit flies in eastern Australia (after Snowball and Lukins 1964).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Parasitoids</th>
<th>Hosts</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>BRACONIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diachasmimorphekraussi</td>
<td>B. cacuminata, B. jarvisi, B. kraussi,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>B. neohumeralis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diachasmimorphtryoni</td>
<td>B. tryoni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fopiusdeeralensis</td>
<td>Bactrocera jarvisi, B. neohumeralis, B. kraussi,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>B. pallida, B. tryoni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Opiusperkinsi</td>
<td>B. tryoni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Psyttalafijiensis*</td>
<td>B. cacuminata, B. jarvisi, B. kraussi,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>B. neohumeralis</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* This is almost certainly not the true P. fijiensis from Fiji and Tonga (R.A. Wharton pers. comm. 1992)

The intensive studies of Bateman (1968) over a seven year period in an orchard some 90 km south of Sydney also produced extremely few parasitoids, the majority being Diachasmimorphtryoni (M.A. Bateman pers. comm. 1989) a species that had been reported by Allman (1939) many years earlier. When a grass sward was allowed to develop in the orchard, ant colonies increased in abundance and ants were responsible for at least 10% mortality of fruit fly larvae and puparia in the soil. Mortality was also caused by predaceous beetles and a millipede.

Fullaway (1951) listed a number of additional natural enemies of fruit flies in Australia but nothing is known of their effectiveness. They were, Hymenoptera: Aganaspis daci Weld (Cynipidae), Dirhinus sp. (Chalcididae), Spalangia sp. and Pachycrepoideus vindemirates (Pteromalidae), Galesus sp. (Diapriidae); Coleoptera: Thyrocephalus albertisi (Staphylinidae).
Early attempts at biological control of the Queensland fruit fly *Bactrocera tryoni* involved the release in New South Wales in 1932 to 1933 of several thousand *Tetrastichus giffardianus* and small numbers of *Psyttalia concolor* and *Biosteres fullawayi* (Table 2.6). During 1937 and 1938 some 205,000 *Aceratoneuromya indica* were liberated in New South Wales and a number in Queensland. Those liberations did not lead to any establishments (Noble 1942).

**Table 2.6** Liberations of parasitoids for the biological control of *Bactrocera tryoni* in Australia.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Parasitoid</th>
<th>Liberated</th>
<th>From</th>
<th>Result</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>BRACONIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Biosteres fullawayi</em></td>
<td>1933</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Noble 1942, Wilson 1960</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha longicaudata</em></td>
<td>1956, 1957</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Snowball &amp; Lukins 1964</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1958, 1959</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-<em>†</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Fopius arisanus</em></td>
<td>1956, 1957</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Snowball &amp; Lukins 1964</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1958, 1959</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>†</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>F. vandenboschi</em></td>
<td>1958, 1959</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-*</td>
<td>Snowball &amp; Lukins 1964</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psyttalia concolor</em></td>
<td>1932, 1933</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Noble 1942, Wilson 1960</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>P. incisi</em></td>
<td>1958, 1959</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Snowball &amp; Lukins 1964</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CHALCIDIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Dirhinus anthracina</em></td>
<td>1958, 1959</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Snowball et al. 1962a,b,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Snowball &amp; Lukins 1964</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>EULOPHIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aceratoneuromya indica</em></td>
<td>1937, 1938</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Noble 1942, Wilson 1960</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1958, 1959</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Snowball et al. 1962b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Tetrastichus giffardianus</em></td>
<td>1932, 1933</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Noble 1942, Wilson 1960</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1958, 1959</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Snowball &amp; Lukins 1964</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* established briefly then died out
† still present on Lord Howe Is in 1962 (Snowball and Lukins 1964)

Following success against the oriental fruit fly in Hawaii and after it had been shown that *Fopius arisanus*, *F. vandenboschi* and *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* would parasitise both the Queensland fruit fly and the solanum fruit fly *Bactrocera cacuminata* arrangements were made for their introduction from Hawaii. A stimulus for this decision was that two of these species had biological characteristics previously unknown in Australian parasitoids of fruit flies. *Fopius arisanus* oviposits in the host egg or recently hatched larva and *F. vandenboschi* in the first instar larva (van den Bosch and Haramoto 1951). Eggs and young larvae of *Bactrocera tryoni* occur close to the skin of the host fruit, but older larvae are less accessible in the deeper layers, particularly of commercial fruits. These two parasites are thus more likely to be able to locate hosts than are those, like *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata*, that oviposit only in older larvae (Snowball et al. 1962b).

In 1956 and 1957, 1,700 *Fopius arisanus* and 21,000 *D. longicaudata*, bred in Sydney from material introduced from Hawaii, were liberated at Coffs Harbour in northern New South Wales, but establishment was not achieved (Snowball et al. 1962b).

In 1958 and 1959 the following numbers of foreign parasitoids were bred in Hawaii, carefully screened there and again in Sydney to exclude all fellow travellers (Snowball et al. 1962a) and liberated in the field: *Fopius arisanus* 229,200, *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* complex 198,700, *Fopius vandenboschi* 28,100, *Psyttalia incisi* 27,100, *Dirhinus anthracina* 2,500, *Aceratoneuromya indica* 3,200, *Tetrastichus giffardianus*
2,500. The liberations were made at 25 locations in New South Wales, 59 in Queensland, 6 on Lord Howe Is, all against *Bactrocera tryoni*, and 12 liberations were made in Western Australia against the Mediterranean fruit fly (Snowball et al. 1962b).

Extensive sampling of fruits in eastern Australia between 1960 and 1962 revealed only *Fopius arisanus* still established on the mainland and that, at places, it had dispersed up to a maximum of 5 miles in the 4 years since liberation. It was present on Lord Howe Is from late 1959 to early 1961, but then died out. *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* was still present in low numbers on Lord Howe Is on the last sampling occasion in 1962. The sampling of fruits did not provide information on *Dirhinus anthracina*, which is a pupal parasite and hence would only be found by sampling pupae in the soil. More recently, from an examination of somewhat limited material Wharton (pers. comm. 1992) has not been able to determine whether *D. longicaudata* is established in Queensland or whether there is a closely related native species intermediate between *D. longicaudata* and the native *D. kraussii*.

A ratio of 1.5 females per male indicated that, under Australian conditions, *Fopius arisanus* mated satisfactorily in the field. It was bred from *Bactrocera barringtoniae*, *B. cacuminata*, *B. neohumeralis*, *B. tryoni* and possibly *B. jarvisi* and *B. kraussi* which, between them, were infesting 14 types of fruit. *Fopius arisanus* exhibited marked preferences for certain fruits, but these varied in different years and in different localities. The most consistent was for infested star fruit *Averrhoa carambola* in north Queensland. *Fopius arisanus* showed no preference for utilising more heavily, rather than less heavily, infested fruit. A review of climatic factors indicated that maximum winter temperatures of less than 15°C (attained at approximately the latitude of Brisbane) were unfavourable to the continued existence of *F. arisanus*. There was no indication that native parasitoids were displaced by *F. arisanus*, as had occurred in Hawaii with the previously established *F. vandenboschi* and *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* (van den Bosch et al. 1951).

In Hawaii, levels of parasitisation by *Fopius arisanus* ranged up to 70% in guava (Bess and Haramoto 1958) and now averages about 60% (W.C. Mitchell pers. comm. 1992). In Australia, they reached 78% for the most favoured fruits but, for others, ranged between 0 and 35%. The high levels of parasitisation in favoured fruits in northern Australia were thus often offset there by the production of many flies from fruits not favoured by the parasitoid. The data obtained by Snowball (1966) and Snowball and Lukins (1964) indicated that the introduction of *F. arisanus* had reduced the number of flies produced per fruit, but had not had much effect on the percentage of fruit infested.

In relation to predation, Drew (1987) studied, in their endemic rainforest habitat in southeast Queensland, the effects of fruit-eating birds and rodents on two fruit flies, *Bactrocera cacuminata* and *B. halfordiae*. In spring and summer, 66% of *Solanum mauritianum* fruit (host to *Bactrocera cacuminata*) were eaten by the brown pigeon, *Macropygia phasianella*, the amount increasing to 77% during the main summer breeding season of the fly. Parasitisation of *Bactrocera cacuminata* by *Fopius arisanus* and *Diachasmimorpha kraussii* never exceeded 17%. Rodents consumed 78% of the fallen fruit of *Planchonella australis*, a major host of *Bactrocera halfordiae*. It was postulated that fruit-eating vertebrates were the major cause of reduction in fruit fly populations in their natural habitat, an effect brought about by the ingestion of fruit fly infested fruits leading to the destruction of fruit fly eggs and larvae. Even when uninfested fruits were eaten, this made them unavailable as a fruit fly breeding resource. By comparison with the vertebrates, the hymenopterous parasitoids were not major enemies of fruit flies in their endemic habitat and appeared to have limited value for fruit fly control in cultivated host fruits.

(c) **Cook Is**

Small numbers of six parasitoids from Hawaii or Fiji were liberated against *Bactrocera melanotus* between 1927 and 1938, but there was no evidence of establishment (Table 2.7)
(Rao et al. 1971). Walker and Deitz (1979) listed nine introductions between 1927 and 1938, but the absence of voucher specimens, possible misidentifications and changes in nomenclature do not permit meaningful additions to Table 2.7. Several hundred *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* from Fiji reached the Cook Is in good condition in 1954, but no information is available on their fate (O’Connor 1954). Although there is no record of its introduction *Fopius arisanus* has recently (1991) been recovered, at times reaching a parasitisation level of 60%. It occurs in a wide range of host fruit (P. Joseph pers. comm. 1992).

Table 2.7  Attempts at biological control of fruit flies in Cook Is.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Parasitoid</th>
<th>Liberated</th>
<th>From</th>
<th>Result</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha longicaudata</em></td>
<td>1954 Fiji</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>O’Connor 1954</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>D. tryoni</em></td>
<td>1927</td>
<td>Australia via Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Rao et al. 1971</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psyttalia concolor</em></td>
<td>1927 Fiji</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Rao et al. 1971</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aceratoneuromyia indica</em></td>
<td>1938 Fiji</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>Lever 1938b, Noble 1942</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Tetrastichus</em> sp.</td>
<td>1927 Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Rao et al. 1971</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 2.8  Native enemies of fruit flies in Fiji.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Parasitoids</th>
<th>Stage attacked</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>Braconidae</em></td>
<td>larva</td>
<td>Hinckley 1965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha hageni</em></td>
<td>larva</td>
<td>Hinckley 1965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psyttalia fijiensis</em></td>
<td>mature larva</td>
<td>Clausen et al. 1965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Phaeocarpa leveri</em></td>
<td>pupa</td>
<td>Hinckley 1965, Lever 1945</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Chalcididae</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Spalangia endius</em></td>
<td>egg</td>
<td>Simmonds 1936</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pteromalidae</em></td>
<td>larva, pupa</td>
<td>Simmonds 1936</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pachycrepoides vindemiae</em></td>
<td>pupa</td>
<td>Simmonds 1936</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Predators

| *Lygaeidae*                                     | egg            | Simmonds 1936      |
| *Formicidae*                                    | larva, pupa    | Simmonds 1936      |
| *Staphylinidae*                                 | egg, larva, pupa | Simmonds 1936     |

* probably introduced
(d) FIJI

As early as 1916, a braconid wasp was reared from fruit flies infesting granadilla, and in 1921 one was again found in 25% of larvae in guava. From what is now known of the endemic parasitoids (Table 2.8), it is probable that these were *Diachasmimorpha hageni* and *Psyttalia fijiensis*. In April 1935, 5% parasitisation was recorded of larvae in guava and, by June, double that value. In cherry guava it is probable that the level was over 20% (Simmonds 1936). In 1937 12.5% parasitisation was recorded (Simmonds 1937).

In the hope of achieving an even greater degree of suppression of any or all hosts, introductions of fruit fly parasitoids took place from Hawaii in 1935. Two African species were introduced, *Tetrastichus giffardianus*, which became established, and *Psyttalia concolor* which failed (Table 2.9). Up to 20% parasitisation by the former was recorded in guava. Recoveries were also made from fruit fly puparia of the pteromalid *Spalangia cameroni*, which had been introduced from Hawaii in 1927 for control of the housefly (Simmonds 1929). It was later mistaken by Lever (1938c) as an endemic species. In 1937 the pupal parasitoid *Dirhinus anthracina* was introduced from Hawaii (Simmonds 1937), but did not become established. Next, *Aceratoneuromyia indica*, sent from Australia but originally from India, was released between 1938 and 1942 and, although initially thought to have failed, it was later (1952) recovered in large numbers.

Following reports in the early fifties of the very considerable recent success in the biological control of *Bactrocera dorsalis* in Hawaii, introductions to Fiji were resumed. Between 1951 and 1954, four species of braconid were released (Table 2.9). Of these, only two, *Fopius arisanus* and *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata*, were later recovered in the field (O'Connor 1954). By 1959 rearings from orange and grapefruit, yielding 21.4% *F. arisanus* and 0.3% *D. longicaudata*, were reported by O'Connor (1960) who added that, in the opinion of H.W. Simmonds who had 'made a study of local fruit flies over the years, infestation of fruits is now very much less than it was ten years ago. It seems likely that *Opius oophilus* (= *Fopius arisanus*) has been responsible for a considerable measure of control of fruitflies'. Rao et al. (1971) stated that *F. arisanus* 'appears to have played a significant part in controlling the fruit flies'.

A collection of 46,492 fruit fly puparia sent to Hawaii in 1952 produced 3,241 adults of five different parasitoids (Table 2.10). About 94% of these were *Aceratoneuromyia indica*, which normally produces from 10 to 25 or more adults per host. The least abundant parasite was *Fopius arisanus*, of which eight adults emerged from *Bactrocera passiflorae* infesting guava (Clausen et al. 1965). Sixteen years later *Fopius arisanus* was recovered in greater numbers, together with *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* (Arambourg and Onillon 1970).

Hinckley (1965) found that overall levels of parasitisation in the period 1961 to 1963 were lower in rearings from native than from introduced fruits. Averages ranged from 4.5% for dawa (*Pometia pinnata*) to 9.4% for ivi (*Inocarpus fagiferus*), compared with a range from 21.7% for citrus and 24.2% for guava (*Psidium guajava*) to 61.3% in cherry guava (*P. cattleianum*). *D. longicaudata* was the predominant parasitoid in rearings from ivi and vutu (*Barringtonia*), but parasitised no more than 8% of larvae in either host. *Diachasmimorpha hageni* reared from ivi was the only native parasite recovered. *Psyttalia fijiensis* had apparently been displaced, at least in the study area, although it had been present in the 1951 rearings (Table 2.10), which were probably from another location. Hinckley (1965) concluded that the increase in percentage parasitisation was largely due to the more effective attack of *Fopius arisanus* on the eggs of *Bactrocera passiflorae* in guava and citrus. Earlier, Simmonds (1936) had reported combined parasitisation by the native species as 5% in guava and 14% in cherry guava, about a quarter of that achieved by the introduced parasites. *Fopius arisanus* has, nevertheless, been less effective on *Bactrocera passiflorae* and *B. xanthodes* in Fiji than on *B. dorsalis* in Hawaii. Thus, on guava in Hawaii, average levels of parasitisation of *B. dorsalis* were reported to be 76% on Oahu, 61% on Maui and 44% on Hawaii (Haramoto 1957). This compares with 22% in Fiji (Hinckley 1965).
Table 2.9  Attempts at biological control of fruit flies in Fiji.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Parasitoid</th>
<th>Introduced</th>
<th>From</th>
<th>Result</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>BRACONIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>var. <em>formosanus</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>var. <em>novocaledonicus</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>var. <em>taiensis</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psyttalia concolor</em></td>
<td>1935</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Cochereau 1970, Clausen 1978b, Simmonds, 1936</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>P. fletcheri</em></td>
<td>Present in 1938, no record of introduction</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Lever 1938b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CHALCIDIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Dirhinus anthracina</em></td>
<td>1937</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Hinckley 1965, Lever 1938a, Simmonds 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>EULOPHIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aceratoneuromyia indica</em></td>
<td>1938, 1941</td>
<td>India via Australia</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Clausen et al. 1965, Hinckley 1965, Lever 1938a,b, Noble 1942</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Tetrastichus giffardianus</em></td>
<td>1935</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Clausen 1978b, Hinckley 1965, Lever 1938a, Simmonds 1936</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>PTEROMALIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Spalangia cameroni</em></td>
<td>1929</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Lever 1938c, Simmonds 1929</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>S. endius</em></td>
<td>?</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Clausen et al. 1965</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Although treated by Clausen et al. (1965) as native, it is almost certainly an introduced species

Table 2.10  Parasitoids reared from Fiji fruit flies.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>1951 (Clausen et al. 1965)</th>
<th>1968 (Arambourg and Onillon 1970)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>Aceratoneuromyia indica</em></td>
<td>3036</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha hageni</em></td>
<td>29</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha longicaudata var. taeiensis</em></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>178</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Fopius arisanus</em></td>
<td>8</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psyttalia fijiensis</em></td>
<td>66</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Spalangia endius</em></td>
<td>102</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Spalangia sp.</em></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Collections of infested fruits in Fiji in 1968 yielded 30% parasitisation by *Fopius arisanus* of fruit flies in cherry guava, but only 2.6% in *Inocarpus* and 1.8% in *Barringtonia*. On the other hand, *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* was recovered from 8.4% of the fruit flies in *Barringtonia*. One batch of cherry guavas produced 2% parasitisation by *Aceratoneuromyia indica* (Cochereau 1968). All of the *Barringtonia* fruit and almost all of those of cherry guava were collected from the ground, which may have influenced the parasitisation levels, especially those of *F. arisanus* (P. Cochereau pers. comm. 1992). In 1951 *Aceratoneuromyia indica* had emerged in large numbers (Table 2.10), but a decade later it was comparatively rare (Arambourg and Onillon 1970, Hinckley 1965). The same situation applies to *Tetrastichus giffardianus*. It is not known whether this reduced abundance is due to the presence of *Fopius arisanus* and *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata*, which Hinckley (1965) postulated may have caused a reduction in the abundance of the native *Psyttalia fijiensis* and *Diachasmimorpha hageni*. However, *P. fijiensis* survives competition with *F. arisanus* in Tonga and levels of parasitisation by *D. longicaudata* and *A. indica* (which have been recovered from Fiji but not Tonga) are generally low (R.A. Wharton pers. comm. 1992).

In addition to parasitisation, mortality of *Bactrocera dorsalis* eggs resulting from infection, introduced through ovipositor punctures made by *Fopius arisanus* without egg laying, was 88% in Hawaii, compared with only 9% for *Bactrocera passiflorae* eggs in Fiji. Hinckley (1965) considered it improbable that the pathogens which entered the eggs in Hawaii could be absent from Fiji, but offered no explanation for the difference. One possible factor may be the reported reluctance of *Fopius arisanus* to search for eggs in fallen fruit (Haramoto 1957), which must reduce its effectiveness in Fiji, since *Bactrocera passiflorae* has no hesitation in ovipositing in fruit on the ground. Hinckley (1965) remarked that only on cherry guava, the fruits of which remain on the tree long after ripening, do the oviposition habits of *Bactrocera passiflorae* and *Fopius arisanus* coincide.

Amongst the native fruit fly predators (Table 2.8), the polyphagous lygaeid bug *Germalus pacificus* was observed sucking the contents from fruit fly eggs. It was considered by Simonds (1936) to be the most important single factor in reducing fruit fly abundance in Fiji at that time. An unidentified staphylinid beetle and, under some circumstances, ants were also observed attacking eggs and larvae. Numbers of eggs and larvae were also probably destroyed by the eager attack of flying foxes on most ripening fruits. The result was that, towards the end of the guava season, fruit fly numbers were suppressed to such an extent that the last fruits were practically free from infestation (Simonds 1936).

The overall conclusion of Hinckley (1965) was that infestation levels of *Bactrocera xanthodes* in vutu and *B. passiflorae* in guava and various native fruits remained at an unsatisfactorily high level in Fiji. However, there seems little reason to doubt that the levels would have been considerably higher in the absence of introduced parasitoids.

A survey for fruit fly parasitoids in 1985/86 revealed that 30 to 35% of fruit fly larvae were parasitised, mainly by *Fopius arisanus*, but also by *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* (M.L. Autar pers. comm. 1989). In recent (1991 and 1992) sampling, two eulophids and three braconids have been recovered from *B. passiflorae* but not from *B. xanthodes*. Of the eulophids, *Aceratoneuromyia indica* was recovered from infested *Syzygium* and an unidentified species from *Artocarpus*. The first of the braconids, a single specimen of the native *Psyttalia fijiensis* was reared from *Bactrocera passiflorae* on *Citrus maxima*, but none from five collections of strawberry guava, *Psidium littorale* (which yielded 21 fruit flies) or from two collections of infested *Terminalia* fruit. Over the same period, *P. fijiensis* has been reared in Tonga from both guava *Psidium guajava* and *Terminalia*. The native *Diachasmimorpha hageni* was not recovered, although it had been bred by earlier workers from infested *Barringtonia, Ochrosia* and *Inocarpus*. Strangely, no parasitoids at all were recovered from heavily infested *Barringtonia* (A. Allwood pers. comm. 1992, R.A. Wharton...
pers. comm. 1992). Wharton (pers. comm. 1992) points out that it would be important for biological control to test competition between *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* and *Psyttalia fijiensis* on several fruits and fruit fly hosts. It would also be valuable to compare the habitat from which *P. fijiensis* was collected in Tonga with that in which larvae infesting *Terminalia* and guava in Fiji were not being parasitised. Differences in rainfall, proximity to native forests, or even wind exposure may prove to be important factors, but seasonality should not be, since *Terminalia* was collected at about the same time in both Tonga and Fiji.

The other two braconids recovered were the commoner *Fopius arisanus* (recovered from at least 10 fruits and notably from guava) and the less common *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* (from 7 fruits and also most commonly on guava). Several samples of infested fruit yielded both parasitoid species (R.A. Wharton pers. comm. 1992).

(e) **FRENCH POLYNESIA**

Both *Bactrocera kirki* and *Bactrocera tryoni* infest papaya, mango and some less important fruits in French Polynesia. *Diachasmimorpha tryoni* was introduced, but failed to become established.

(f) **GUAM**

*Bactrocera dorsalis* was first recorded on Guam in 1948, although it may have been present about the same time in 1935 that it was reported on Saipan. *B. dorsalis* was eradicated from Guam (and also from Rota, Agiguan, Tinian and Saipan) in 1965 and has not been trapped there since (Mitchell 1980). Only two species of fruit fly were present on Guam in 1989, the melon fly and *Bactrocera ochrosiae*, which also responds to cue lure. The latter is endemic to the Marianas and does not attack cultivated fruit or vegetables. Earlier reports of the presence of *B. frauenfeldi* are in error: there are no specimens in collections and it is not there now (D. Nafus pers. comm. 1989).

Three species of parasitoid were introduced between 1937 and 1967 from Hawaii to control *B. cucurbitae*, which was first discovered in Guam in 1936 (Swezey 1946) (Table 2.11). Of these only *Psyttalia fletcheri* became established, causing 6.1% mortality near the point of release shortly after liberation. However, this population died out and six more introductions were made between 1950 and 1967. It was recovered in 1971, so it eventually became established. No record is available of the introduction of the muscid fly *Atherigona orientalis*, which is commonly seen investigating oviposition holes made by *Bactrocera cucurbitae* whose larvae are often not found in fruit where this activity is observed (D. Nafus pers. comm. 1989). *A. orientalis* is recorded as draining the contents of melon fly larvae (Bohart and Gressitt 1951), but is also capable of attacking both sound and damaged fruit.

In 1989 *Psyttalia fletcheri* was present at very low levels and *Bactrocera cucurbitae* was very abundant and causing substantial economic damage to cucumbers, bitter melons, cantaloupe and watermelon. The level of control was not considered adequate (Nafus and Schreiner 1989). Many melon flies, but no parasitoids, were bred from several hundred *Momordica* melons in 1991/1992 (Nafus and Schreiner pers. comm. 1992).

Seven parasitoids were introduced from Hawaii to control *Bactrocera dorsalis* (Table 2.11). Although these included *Fopius arisanus*, *F. vandenboschi* and *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata*, which at that time were producing valuable control of oriental fruit fly in Hawaii, and in spite of the fact that substantial numbers of parasitoids were liberated, establishment was not achieved. The only parasitoid that became established was the eulophid wasp *Aceratoneuromyia indica*. By 1962 an eradication campaign against the oriental fruit fly in the Marianas had proved successful so, unless *A. indica* can maintain itself on *Bactrocera ochrosiae*, it may not have survived, since it cannot develop in *B. cucurbitae* (table 2.3) (Nafus and Schreiner 1989).
It is of interest to note that a colour variety of *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* had been reared as early as 1937 from *Bactrocera ochrosiae* larvae in *Ochrosia* and *Ximenia* fruits (Fullaway 1946). However, this parasitoid was not recorded during the 1950s when extensive sampling was carried out for recoveries of the Hawaiian introductions (Clausen et al. 1965).

**Table 2.11** Introductions from Hawaii for the biological control of fruit flies in Guam (Nafus and Schreiner 1989).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Parasitoid</th>
<th>Liberated</th>
<th>Result</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>A. <em>Bactrocera cucurbitae</em></strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha dacusii</em></td>
<td>1950-1952</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psyttalia concolor</em></td>
<td>1937</td>
<td>？</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>P. fletcheri</em></td>
<td>1937</td>
<td>T†</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1950, 1953, 1955, 1959</td>
<td>+</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1960, 1967</td>
<td>(but little effect)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>B. <em>Bactrocera dorsalis</em></strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha longicaudata</em> var. <em>compensans</em></td>
<td>1952</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha longicaudata</em> var. <em>formosanus</em></td>
<td>1952, 1955</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha longicaudata</em> var. <em>longicaudatus</em></td>
<td>1959, 1960</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha longicaudata</em> var. <em>malaiensis</em></td>
<td>1952</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha longicaudata</em> var. <em>novocaledonicus</em></td>
<td>1955</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Fopius arisanus</em></td>
<td>1955, 1959*, 1960</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Fopius vandenboschi</em></td>
<td>1950</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psyttalia incisii</em></td>
<td>1950</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| **CHALCIDIDAE*** | | |
| *Dirhinus anthracina* | 1959, 1960 | - |

| **EULOPHIDAE*** | | |
| *Aceratoneuromyia indica* | 1952, 1955, 1959, 1960 | + |
| *Tetrastichus giffardianus* | 1959, 1960 | ? |

* These liberations also made on Saipan
† T = established briefly, then died out

**Table 2.12** Parasitoids emerging in Hawaii from puparia of *Bactrocera curvipennis*, *B. psidii* and *Bactrocera* sp. from New Caledonia (Clausen et al. 1965).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Parasitoid</th>
<th>Number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>BRACONIDAE</strong>*</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diachasmimorpha longicaudata</em> var. <em>novocaledonicus</em></td>
<td>922</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psyttalia fijiensis</em></td>
<td>284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Opisus froggatti</em> (?)</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>PTEROMALIDAE</strong>*</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Spalangia endius</em></td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* probably not native
(g) KIRIBATI
In 1987 *B. cucurbitae* was discovered on Kiritimati (Christmas Is) and a host-free period was established until 1989. Since then, cucurbits have again been grown, but no melon flies have been detected (G.S. Sandhu pers. comm. 1992).

(h) NAURU
Larvae of *B. cucurbitae* were found in a ribbed gourd (*Luffa acutangula*), in a house garden in 1982 (R. Muniappan pers. comm. 1992) and one adult male was attracted to cue lure in October 1992. At that time *B. frauenfeldi* was abundant and both *B. xanthodes* and *B. dorsalis* were trapped (B.S. Fletcher pers. comm. 1992).

(i) NEW CALEDONIA
As part of the world wide search for parasitoids that would attack the oriental fruit fly in Hawaii, twenty five shipments totalling 69,029 puparia of three species of *Bactrocera* were sent in 1950 from New Caledonia to Hawaii (Table 2.12). A colour variety of *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata*, described as *novocaledonicus*, was the most abundant parasitoid reared from both *Bactrocera psidii* and *B. curvipennis* and both of these hosts produced smaller numbers of *Psyttalia fijiensis*. *P. fijiensis* showed an apparent preference for *Bactrocera psidii* infesting guava. Four adults of a possible colour form of *Opius froggatti* also emerged from *Bactrocera psidii* (Clausen et al. 1965). However in extensive studies on New Caledonian fruit flies, Cochereau (1970) did not encounter *O. froggatti*, so doubt must be cast on the validity of the Clausen et al. (1965) record.

The pupal parasitoid *Spalangia endius* was present, but less abundant, in the puparia sent to Hawaii than either *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* or *Psyttalia fijiensis* (Clausen et al. 1965). These collections gave an overall parasitisation rate of slightly less than 2%. In 1965 Cochereau (1966a) obtained only a single parasitoid from infested guavas, so the percentage parasitisation was negligible at that stage. In 1968, samples of fruit fly infested guava and cherry guava yielded an average of about 8% parasitisation of a mixed infestation of fruit fly species, but mainly *Bactrocera psidii*. *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* was the more abundant of the two parasites produced, with *Psyttalia fijiensis* occasionally contributing as much as 45% of parasites emerging in the high country, but no more than 9% in the warmer moister lowlands. Cochereau (1970) concluded that parasitoids exercised only a low level of biological control of fruit flies in New Caledonia.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Parasitoid</th>
<th>Introduced</th>
<th>From</th>
<th>Result</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>BRACONIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Fopius arisanus</em></td>
<td>1966</td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>- dead on arrival</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psyttalia concolor</em></td>
<td>1966</td>
<td>France</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EULOPHIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Tetrastichus giffardianus</em></td>
<td>1936</td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>- doubtful record</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In this regard it is interesting to note the unsuccessful attempts to introduce and establish parasites (Table 2.13), although it is clear from the accounts that quite inadequate effort was expended. According to Risbec (1942) the pupal parasitoid *Tetrastichus giffardianus* was sent from Fiji in 1936, but Cochereau (1970) reported that he had been unable to trace any record of this introduction and that this parasitoid was not present in any of his rearings. The report of this introduction must, therefore, be regarded
as questionable. *Fopius arisanus* adults sent on two occasions from Fiji in 1966 died in transit. Three consignments of *Psyttalia concolor*, the well known Mediterranean parasite of the olive fly *Bactrocera oleae* were received from France in 1966. Although females would not parasitise New Caledonian fruit flies in the laboratory, adults were liberated near Noumea, but the species failed to become established (Cochereau 1970).

(j) **NORTHERN MARIANAS**

*Bactrocera dorsalis* was first reported on Saipan in 1935 (Esaki 1952) and then spread to the other islands. It was eradicated from the Mariana Is in 1965 (Mitchell 1980).

*Bactrocera cucurbitae* was first recorded in 1943 on Saipan, Tinian and Rota, having probably spread there from Guam (Esaki 1952). Portion of the consignments of four of the parasitoids introduced in the fifties from Hawaii to Guam against the oriental fruit fly were liberated on Saipan (Table 2.11), but there is no information on the result (Nafus and Schreiner 1989). Eight adults of a colour variety of *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* emerged from 125 puparia of *Bactrocera ochrosiae* sent from Saipan to Hawaii in 1949, three years before any attempt was made to colonise other subspecies of *D. longicaudata* sent from Hawaii. This parasite was reared from the same host in Guam (Clausen et al. 1965).

The only other fruitfly present is *B. ochrosiae* which is abundant on all islands. It breeds in *Ochrosia marianensis* fruit and, although not regarded as a pest species, it has also been reared from Surinam cherry on Saipan (A. Moore pers. comm. 1992).

*Bactrocera frauenfeldi* has been reported from the Northern Marianas in the past, but recent surveys have failed to locate it. It may have been eradicated at the same time as the oriental fruit fly (D. Nafus pers. comm. 1989).

*B. cucurbitae* was eradicated from the Northern Mariana Is (but not from Guam) in 1965 (Mitchell 1980), but re-introduced to Saipan in 1986, possibly from Rota which had earlier been re-infested from Guam. It is also again present on Tinian and Aguigan. Soon after it reappeared in Saipan, its populations increased greatly, cue-lure traps catching more than 10 per day in 1988. Nevertheless, by 1991, the population had diminished to such a low level that 50 cue-lure traps caught no *B. cucurbitae* (but many *B. ochrosiae*) during 6 weeks in summer. The cause of the population crash is unknown. However about 200 wild and commercial melons yielded many adults of the fly *Atherigona orientalis*, which has predaceous larvae (see section on Guam) but no parasitoids (A. Moore, pers. comm. 1992). A sterile male eradication campaign for *B. cucurbitae* is currently being planned for Guam and the Northern Marianas.

(k) **PAPUA NEW GUINEA**

No fruit fly parasitoids have been introduced (F.M. Dori pers. comm. 1989). The only records of fruit fly parasitoids appear to be (i) *Diachasmimorpha* sp. *nr* *longicaudata* from *Bactrocera frauenfeldi* (Froggatt 1939) (ii) *Opis* sp. from *B. frauenfeldi* in guava (Ismay and Dori 1985) and *Opis* sp. probably from *Bactrocera strigifinis* in *Cucurbita maxima* (Greve and Ismay 1983). The earwig *Chelisoches morio* is recorded as a predator of *Bactrocera musae* larvae (Ismay, undated).

In New Britain, to the east, 54 adults of three parasitoid species emerged from 3,487 puparia of *Bactrocera frauenfeldi* collected near Rabaul and sent to Hawaii, giving a parasitisation rate of 1.5%. The parasitoids comprised 10 *Fopius deeralensis*, 30 *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* and 14 *Psytalia fijiensis*. The first and second of these species showed slight atypical colour differences which may be of taxonomic significance (Clausen et al. 1965).

(l) **WESTERN SAMOA**

Three parasitoids were introduced to Western Samoa between 1935 and 1938, but only *Aceratoneuromyia indica* became established (Clausen 1978b, Noble 1942) (Table 2.14). *Fopius arisanus* was reared from *Bactrocera kirki* and *B. obscura* in 1991 from a wide range of fruits (A. Allwood pers. comm. 1992), although there is no record of its introduction.
Table 2.14 Attempts at biological control of fruit flies in Western Samoa.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Parasitoid</th>
<th>Introduced</th>
<th>From</th>
<th>Result</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CHALCIDIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Dirhinus anthracina</em></td>
<td>1935-38</td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>Clausen 1978b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1938</td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>Lever 1938b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EULOPHIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aceratoneuromyia indica</em></td>
<td>1938</td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Clausen 1978b,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1938</td>
<td>India via</td>
<td></td>
<td>Noble 1942</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Tetrastichus giffardianus</em></td>
<td>1935-38</td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>Clausen 1978b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1938</td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>Lever 1938b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(m) SOLOMON IS
No fruit fly parasitoids have been introduced and *Bactrocera frauenfeldi* is reported to suffer less than 5% parasitisation. *Diachasmimorpha kraussii* was bred from infested Guadalcanal mangos from which *B. frauenfeldi* adults were produced (C. Williams pers. comm. 1989).

(n) TONGA
There are no early records of fruit fly parasitoids (O. Fakalata pers. comm. 1989), although *Fopius arisanus* and *Psyttalia fijiensis* were reared from *Bactrocera facialis* or *B. kirki* in 1991. Neither *B. distincta* nor *B. xanthodes* produced parasitoids. A few specimens of the pupal parasitoid *Spalangia* sp. were also reared (A. Allwood pers comm. 1992). Table 2.15 shows that the distribution of six fruit flies throughout the island groups of the Kingdom is not uniform (Litsinger et al. 1991), a timely reminder that uniformity cannot be assumed, either, for other island groups.

Table 2.15 Distribution of the six fruit fly species within the island groups of Tonga (Litsinger et al. 1991).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Southern Group</th>
<th>Central Group</th>
<th>Northern Group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Tongatapu</td>
<td>Ha'apai</td>
<td>Vava'u</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>'Eua</td>
<td></td>
<td>Niuas*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Bactrocera distincta</em></td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. facialis</em></td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. kirki</em></td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. obscura</em></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>+</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. passiflorae</em></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>B. xanthodes</em></td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>+</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Niutoputapu and Niuafo'ou Islands

(o) VANUATU
Parasitoids, possibly a *Biosteres* sp., have been reared mainly from *Bactrocera trilineolia*, but the parasitisation rate is low (possibly 1%). It appears that a record of the presence of *Bactrocera xanthodes* may refer to a different species in a morphologically similar complex. According to Risbec (1942), Simmonds (1936, 1937) recorded the despatch of *Tetrastichus giffardianus* from Fiji to Vanuatu in 1936 (Cochereau 1970), but there is no mention of this in the papers of Simmonds referred to, so the record may be in error. In any event, there is no evidence of this species being present in Vanuatu (R. Weller pers. comm. 1989).
5. Major Parasitoids involved in Pacific Fruit Fly Programs

A great deal of confusion exists in the literature because of many changes to the nomenclature of many of the parasitoids and Table 2.16 sets out the present position (van Achterberg and Maeto 1990, Wharton 1987, 1988, 1989a,b, Wharton and Gilstrap 1983). The most important parasitoids have proved to be opine Braconidae. At least 42 species of this group have been recognised from the large number of names applied to this group of parasitoids collected in biological control programs directed against tephritid fruit flies in the Pacific (Wharton and Gilstrap 1983). A few Chalcididae, Eulophidae and Pteromalidae are also involved. Although much of the taxonomy, based mainly on morphological characters, now seems to have stabilised, there is reason to believe that there may be 'strains' within some species that are far better adapted than others to particular hosts. In addition, the genus *Opius* is still a 'dumping ground' for the species of Opiinae that cannot at the moment be placed elsewhere. These factors may necessitate further nomenclatorial changes in the future and care must be taken in biological control projects not to discard a species prematurely because one of its 'strains' is ineffective.

The valid species that are most likely to be of concern in the oceanic Pacific are dealt with serially below. Distribution and host records are based mainly on Wharton and Gilstrap (1983). Host records for most field collected species are assumed hosts, based on association of fly and parasitoid produced from the same batch of fruit. In some instances the association may not be correct, since two or more fly species have been reared from the same batch. Furthermore all specimens of a particular fly species in a mixed infestation may have been killed by the parasitoids exploiting them as hosts, leading to an incorrect association being made of host-parasite relationship. Irrespective of whether oviposition occurs in the egg or the early, middle or later instar larva, all of the important fruit fly parasitoids complete their development in, and emerge from, the puparium (Clausen et al. 1965). A number of records of fruit fly parasitoids have been published by Narayanan and Chawla (1962). Methods for the mass rearing of parasitoids of tephritid fly larvae have been reviewed by Wong and Ramadan (1991).

*Biosteres fullawayi*

Cameroon, Guinea, Nigeria, Senegal, Zaire. Native hosts include *Ceratitis capitata*. Introduced to Hawaii and established, but recovered rarely since 1949 (Bess 1953, Bess et al. 1961). Introduced unsuccessfully to Spain, Puerto Rico and Australia. This species has a diapause.

*Diachasmimorpha albobaileatus*

Sabah. Reared from *Luffa acutangula* (Cucurbitaceae) infested with *Bactrocera cucurbitae*, *B. tau* and *Dacus smieroides*. Introduced to Hawaii, reared on *Bactrocera cucurbitae* and released, but did not become established (Clausen et al. 1965). It prefers large 3rd instar larvae for oviposition, but will oviposit in smaller larvae when forced to (Marucci 1952). It appears that, in Sabah, it may have parasitised *Bactrocera nubilus* and *Dacus smieroides*, since its presence was correlated with these in rearings, indicating a possible forced breeding and imperfect adaptation to melon fly as a host (Clancy 1952).

*Diachasmimorpha dacusii*

North India, Sri Lanka. Native host probably *Bactrocera cucurbitae*. Introduced (as *Opius watersi*) to Hawaii, mass reared on melon fly and *Ceratitis capitata*, released, recovered (Bess et al. 1961) but apparently did not become established.

*Diachasmimorpha hageni*

Fiji. Brought to Hawaii but not released. Native host *Bactrocera passiflorae* but reared with difficulty in the laboratory on *Ceratitis capitata, Bactrocera cucurbitae* and *B. dorsalis*. Mostly males were produced.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Preferred</th>
<th>Previously used</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>BRACONIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biosteres fullaway† (Silvestri)</td>
<td>Diachasma, Opius</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biosteres giffard† (Silvestri)</td>
<td>Opius, Hedylus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diachasmimorpha albobalteatus (Cameron)</td>
<td>Biosteres (or Opius) angaleti (Fullaway)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diachasmimorpha dacusii (Cameron)</td>
<td>Biosteres (or Opius) waterisi (Fullaway)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diachasmimorpha hageni (Fullaway)</td>
<td>Biosteres, Opius</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diachasmimorpha kraussii (Fullaway)</td>
<td>Biosteres, Opius</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diachasmimorpha longicaudata (Ashmead)</td>
<td>Biosteres (or Opius) comperei (Viereck)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diachasmimorpha tryoni (Cameron)</td>
<td>Biosteres (or Opius) formosanus Fullaway</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fopius arisanus (Sonan)</td>
<td>Biosteres (or Opius) longicaudatus Ashmead</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fopius carinatus (Szépligeti)</td>
<td>Biosteres l. var. chocki Fullaway</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fopius deeralensis (Fullaway)</td>
<td>Biosteres l. var. novocaledicus Fullaway</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fopius skinneri (Fullaway)</td>
<td>Biosteres l. var. malaiensis Fullaway</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fopius vandenboschi (Fullaway)</td>
<td>Biosteres l. var. taiensis Fullaway</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Opius froggatti Fullaway</td>
<td>Biosteres, Diachasma, Opius</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Opius perkinsi Fullaway</td>
<td>Biosteres arisanus Sonan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Psyttalia concolor (Szépligeti)</td>
<td>Biosteres</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Psyttalia fjiensis (Fullaway)</td>
<td>Opius, Biosteres</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Psyttalia fletcheri (Silvestri)</td>
<td>Opius, Biosteres</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Psyttalia humilis (Silvestri)</td>
<td>Opius, Biosteres</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Psyttalia incisi (Silvestri)</td>
<td>Opius, Biosteres (M) Biosteres (or Opius) persulcatus (Silvestri)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CHALCIDIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dirhinus anthracina Walker</td>
<td>(M) Dirhinus auratus Ashmead</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dirhinus himalayanus Westwood</td>
<td>(M) Dirhinus giffardii Silvestri</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CYNIPIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aganaspis daci (Weld)</td>
<td>Tryblio grapha daci Weld</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>EULOPHIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aceratoneuromyia indica (Silvestri)</td>
<td>Melittobia, Syntomosphyrum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tetrastichus dacicida</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tetrastichus giffardianus Silvestri</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tetrastichus giffardii Silvestri</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>PTEROMALIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pachycrepoideus vindemiae (Rondani)</td>
<td>Pachycrepoideus dubius Ashmead</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spalangia endius Walker</td>
<td>Spalangia philippinensis Fullaway</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(M) = misidentification
† These do not really belong to Biosteres and taxonomic revision is required (R.A. Wharton pers. comm. 1992)
Diachasmimorpha kraussii
Australia (Queensland), Solomon Is (C. Williams pers. comm. 1989). Introduced to Hawaii, released, recovered, but apparently not established.

Diachasmimorpha longicaudata (Plate 1, Fig. 3)
Southeast Asia. Established in Hawaii under several varietal and specific names, also in Australia, Fiji, Mexico, Costa Rica, Florida and Trinidad. Also introduced to northwestern USA and Guam but not established; introduced to Greece, but outcome unknown.

Its native hosts include the Bactrocera dorsalis complex and in the laboratory it will breed on Ceratitis capitata, Bactrocera frauenfeldi, B. curvipes, B. psidii and B. tryoni, amongst others. One 'strain' was reported not to be able to develop in B. cucurbitae in Hawaii (Clausen et al. 1965) but it is reported to have been reared from B. cucurbitae in Thailand (Meksongsee et al. 1991).

This species oviposits in the nearly fully grown host larvae, puncturing the fruit skin to do so. Its fully grown larvae are capable of diapausing. It visits fruit on the tree and also on the ground where breaks in the fruit skin often give good access to older fruit fly larvae (Bess and Haramoto 1961). Fruit size and volatiles, but not colour, are probably responsible for its greater attraction to some fruit (eg. grapefruit) than others (eg. mango, orange, peach) although greater percentage parasitisation of most larvae was recorded in the latter group. This may be due to length of ovipositor, depth of the fruit pulp and behaviour of the host larvae (Leyva et al. 1991). Mass rearing is possible in the laboratory and rearing and life history studies are reported by Bess and Haramoto (1961) and Greaney et al. (1976). The following (mostly colour) varieties, although they may be sibling species, are mentioned in the literature:

- var. longicaudata (prob. = chocki) Philippines
- var. comperei (prob. = compensans) South India
- var. formosanus Taiwan
- var. malaiaensis Malaysia
- var. novocaledonicus New Caledonia
- var. taiensis Thailand

Diachasmimorpha tryoni
Eastern Australia. Established in Hawaii. Released, but did not become established, in Algeria, California, Canary Is, Egypt, Fiji, Israel, Italy, Puerto Rico, Spain, Tahiti, Western Australia. Native hosts include Bactrocera tryoni, but bred in the laboratory on Ceratitis capitata, Bactrocera passiflorae and B. xanthodes. This species was the most important parasitoid of Ceratitis capitata in Hawaii before Bactrocera dorsalis was introduced and it is still abundant in some areas on some fruits (Bess 1953, Bess and Haramoto 1958). Both Bess et al. (1961) and Haramoto and Bess (1970) state that it cannot develop in B. dorsalis as its eggs become encysted in the host larva soon after deposition. However Wharton (1989b) has reared it from that host in Hawaii. It seems, however, that D. tryoni can only be reared from B. dorsalis after the latter has been parasitised by another parasitoid (T. Wong unpub.). It has a larval diapause at cooler temperatures and adults search for hosts in fallen fruit. D. tryoni oviposits preferentially into larvae of middle and late third instar (Wong et al. 1990). More than one egg may be deposited in a host larva. The first instar larva is cannibalistic in habit and is almost invariably dominant in competition with other species of the same genus (Clausen 1978b). The period from egg to adult occupies 18 to 20 days in summer and field collected material
had a ratio of $\sigma:\varphi = 1.7:1.0$ (Pemberton and Willard 1918). It can be mass reared in the laboratory (Ramadan et al. 1989).

*Fopius arisanus* (Plate 1, Fig. 2)
South India to Taiwan. Reared from many hosts including *Bactrocera dorsalis*. Established (as *Opius oophilus*) in Australia, Costa Rica, Fiji, Hawaii and Mauritius. Also introduced to northwestern USA, Guam, Mexico and Italy, but not recovered (Wharton and Gilstrap 1983). The genus *Biosteres* was used briefly in the 1980s, until van Achterberg and Maeto (1990) pointed out that species of *Biosteres* parasitise, almost exclusively, the subgenus Anthomyiidae and Agromyzidae. They elevated *Fopius* (Wharton 1987) to generic rank for *arisanus*, the species believed to be the major factor in the reduction of oriental fruit fly in Hawaii and which probably reduced Mediterranean fruit fly populations also. Attempts to obtain similar results in other countries or on other hosts have not been as successful.

*F. arisanus* is the only species so far known that oviposits in the eggs of its host (van den Bosch and Haramoto 1951). The female inserts her ovipositor through the oviposition puncture made by the host fruit fly and may spend an hour or more probing to reach as many eggs or freshly hatched larvae as possible. Host eggs that are probed suffer high mortality, even without receiving a parasitoid egg. After the first instar larva has hatched from the egg it ceases development until the host pupates, whereupon development proceeds rapidly. Superparasitism is common, up to 3 eggs being deposited in a single host egg. At optimum temperatures the life cycle occupies 18 to 20 days: 28 to 35 hours for egg incubation, 5 to 8 days for the pupal stage and a variable period for larval life depending upon the rate of development of the host larvae. *F. arisanus* larvae prevent the development of *F. vandenboschi* and *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* larvae when they occur together in the same *Bactrocera dorsalis* larva (van den Bosch and Haramoto 1953). There is a premating period for the male of 5 to 6 days. Adults reared from field collected material show a ratio $\sigma:\varphi$ of 1:1.8. Females are rarely seen on fallen fruit (van den Bosch et al. 1951). It can be mass reared in the laboratory and details are given by Chong (1962) and Ramadan et al. 1992. Behaviour is dealt with by van den Bosch and Haramoto (1951) and biology by Bess and Haramoto (1961).

*Fopius carinatus*
Cameroon, Guinea, Kenya, Sierra Leone, Zaire. Introduced to Hawaii, but not recovered.

*Fopius deeralensis*
Australia, Papua New Guinea, New Britain. Native hosts include *Bactrocera frauenfeldi*, *B. musae* and *B. tryoni*. Introduced to Hawaii but not established.

*Fopius skinneri*
Philippines. Bred from *Bactrocera cucurbitae* (Rejesus et al. 1991). Introduced to Hawaii but failed to become established. Unlike *Fopius arisanus* and *Fopius vandenboschi* it prefers to attack tephritid larvae in cucurbits rather than those in fruit on trees or bushes (Clausen et al. 1965).

*Fopius vandenboschii*
Northern India, Thailand, Malaysia, Philippines, Taiwan. Introduced and established in Hawaii and introduced but not established in Australia, Costa Rica, Guam, Fiji and Mexico. Native hosts include *Bactrocera dorsalis*, but it has been bred in the laboratory on, amongst others, *Ceratitis capitata* and *Bactrocera tryoni*. It can be readily mass reared in the laboratory.
Oviposition occurs through the fruit fly oviposition puncture into the newly hatched fruit fly larvae rather than into the eggs. After hatching, the first instar larva does not moult again until the host larva pupates. Adult females are rarely seen on fruit on the ground and appear to concentrate their attention on mature green and ripe fruit on the tree. The proportion of the sexes in field collected material was $\sigma : \varphi = 1:1.8$.

**Opius froggatti**  
Northeastern Australia, New Caledonia. Introduced to Hawaii but not released. Native hosts include *Bactrocera psidii*. Apparently more host specific than most opiines (Clausen et al. 1965).

**Opius perkinsi**  
Northeastern Australia. One of its native hosts is *Bactrocera tryoni*. It was introduced to Hawaii, but could not be reared. Apparently more host specific than many other opiines (Clausen et al. 1965).

**Psyttalia concolor**  
Africa. Established in Hawaii and Bermuda. Introduced to Australia, Algeria, Egypt, Fiji, New Caledonia, Costa Rica, Puerto Rico, Spain, Italy and Greece, but apparently not established. Native hosts include *Ceratitis capitata*; bred in the laboratory on hosts including *Bactrocera passiflorae*. Oviposition generally takes place into the fully grown fruit fly larva, although younger larvae may be successfully parasitised. Oviposition can start on the day that the female emerges and 250 eggs or more may be laid in the next 3 weeks. The female may live for 3 or more months. The period from egg to adult is 15 to 17 days at optimum summer temperatures and there is no larval diapause (Pemberton and Willard 1918). In the Mediterranean, the life cycle details are somewhat different with adult survival only 15 to 20 days and a pre-oviposition period of 4 to 5 days (Biliotti and Delanoue 1959).

**Psyttalia fijiensis**  
Northern Australia, Papua New Guinea, New Britain, Fiji, New Caledonia. Introduced to Hawaii, but not established. Native hosts include *Bactrocera frauenfeldi*, *B. musae*, *B. tryoni*, *B. passiflorae*, *B. xanthodes*. Can be reared in the laboratory on *B. dorsalis*.

**Psyttalia fletcheri**  
India, Thailand, Malaysia, Philippines, Sri Lanka. It was not reared from a number of *Bactrocera cucurbitae* puparia from South China, Taiwan or Sabah (Clausen et al. 1965). Established in Hawaii, Guam, Philippines, Ryukyu Is (Japan). Released in Puerto Rico, but not recovered. Native hosts include *Bactrocera cucurbitae* in northern India. In Thailand reared from *B. cucurbitae* in egg plant and ivy gourd (*Coccinia grandis*).  
After a preoviposition period of 2 to 5 days, eggs are inserted in larvae that are at least half grown and development is completed in the puparium. There is no larval or pupal diapause. There is a slightly higher proportion of females, which may live for up to 4 months, although most eggs are deposited in the first 3 weeks (Willard 1920). Oviposition behaviour is dealt with by Nishida (1956). It can be mass reared in the laboratory.

**Psyttalia incisi**  
India, Thailand, Malaysia, Borneo, Philippines. Established in Hawaii; released in Australia and Mexico, but not recovered. Native hosts include the *Bactrocera dorsalis* complex and it can be mass reared in the laboratory. It could not be bred successfully in *B. cucurbitae* (Table 2.3). The female has a moderately short ovipositor and this species is recovered mainly from small host fruits.
**Dirhinus anthracina**

East and West Africa. Established in Hawaii against *Ceratitis capitata*, but also found to parasitise *Bactrocera cucurbitae* (up to 17%) and *B. dorsalis* (Nishida 1955). Introduced to Fiji but not established. It was recorded amongst parasitoids reared in 1949/50 from Australian fruit flies (Clausen et al. 1965), although not reported in the 1960/62 surveys of Snowball and Lukins (1964) which did not sample field puparia. For rearing of this pupal parasitoid see Chong (1962).

**Aceratoneuromyia indica**

South India, Sri Lanka, Malaysia, Sabah, Indonesia, Philippines. Native hosts include the *Bactrocera dorsalis* complex. It can also be reared on *Ceratitis capitata* and *Bactrocera tryoni*. Eggs are laid in mature larvae from the day of emergence. It enters the infested fruit through breaks in the skin to search for fruit fly larvae, depositing 15 or more eggs in the posterior end of the body, often being dragged into the fruit pulp during this process by the burrowing host larva. Up to 35 individuals may mature in a single host. Adult females are short lived (not more than 27 days) and may lay 100 or so eggs. Under optimum conditions the egg to adult period is 15 to 16 days, and the progeny are predominantly (75%) female. Noble (1942) provides details of the biology of this parasitoid.

**Pachycrepoideus vindemiae**

North and south India, Thailand, Sabah, Philippines, southern China, Taiwan. This is a nearly cosmopolitan pupal parasitoid of many Diptera. It is apparently non-specific and attacks with almost equal readiness the puparia of most Tephritidae. It was introduced to Hawaii from Australia in 1914 as a dung fly parasitoid.

**Spalangia cameroni**

Possibly Fiji. Bred in very small numbers from fruit fly puparia in Fiji where it has also been reared from housefly puparia.

**Spalangia endius**

Philippines. Established in Hawaii to control the horn fly, this pupal parasitoid has been reared from puparia of *B. cucurbitae* and *B. dorsalis* as well as from those of the horn fly and the housefly.

**Spalangia hirta**

North America. Although this pupal parasitoid has been present in Hawaii at least since 1901, it was not reported to parasitise *Bactrocera cucurbitae* until 1914 (Severin et al. 1914). In USA it attacks housefly pupae.

**Tetrastichus dacicida**

Africa. Established in Hawaii, this larval parasitoid has been reared in large numbers from *B. cucurbitae* in *Momordica* melons and guavas infested with *B. dorsalis*.

**Tetrastichus giffardianus**

South Africa. Introduced and established in Hawaii to combat *Ceratitis capitata*. It also attacks *Bactrocera dorsalis*. If *T. giffardianus* oviposits in *B. cucurbitae* larvae the parasite is unable to develop. However, if *Psytalia fletcheri* oviposits in *B. cucurbitae* larvae before *T. giffardianus*, the latter is able to develop normally (Pemberton and Willard 1918). Information on its biology in Hawaii is provided by Ramadan and Wong (1990).
Aganaspis daci
Australia, Malaysia, Sabah. This cynipid larval parasitoid was reared in large numbers in Queensland from several fruit flies including Bactrocera tryoni. It was released in Hawaii, but failed to become established (Clancy 1952), although laboratory tests showed that it could be reared in B. cucurbitae (Clausen et al. 1965), but with some difficulty (Clancy 1952). It emerged from melon fly larvae collected in the field in Malaysia. A. daci was liberated in Mauritius for the biological control of melon fly on cucumber (Roy 1977) but there is no information on its effects nor is there from a release of this parasitoid in Florida.

6. Discussion
Tropical fruit flies have not, in general, proved to be good targets for classical biological control. This is partly because several features of their life histories make conditions very difficult for parasitoids. Adults of many species disperse widely on emergence, leaving parasitoids behind. Next, fly numbers increase rapidly when suitable fruit is found, but adults again disperse widely to other areas as soon as fruit disappears, once more leaving parasitoids behind. Of at least 82 species of parasitoid that have been reared from tephritids during exploration programs it appears that only 44 have been released and only 20 are known to have become established (Wharton 1989a). Many of the early failures have been attributed to transportation and rearing difficulties and Wharton (1989b) considers that efforts should be renewed to reintroduce and liberate adequate numbers of some of these species. It is thus relevant to examine what practical advantages might be expected to result from the establishment of additional parasitoids that attack oceanic Pacific fruit flies.

It is improbable that there are any native species already occupying the egg-early larval niche where the most effective of the parasitoids introduced to Hawaii, namely Fopius arisanus, operates. This appears to be the only species that has so far been shown to exhibit this behaviour. However, Wharton (1989a) points out that the Afrotropical Rhynchosteres caudatus group is similar morphologically to the Indo-Pacific group of species containing Fopius arisanus. There are at least 11 species in these groups (arisanus, bevisi, carpomyiae, caudatus, desideratus, niger, ottotomoan, persulcatus, silvestrii, skinneri, and vandenboschi), but taxonomic uncertainties and rearing problems have so far prevented the use of most species. The morphology of the ovipositor of at least two species suggests that, like F. arisanus, they may be egg-larval parasitoids. Rhynchosteres caudatus (which is one of the two species), and Opius perproximus alternate seasonally as major parasitoids of ceratitine fruit flies in West Africa. The true Biosteres persulcatus from India has an ovipositor similar to F. arisanus (R.A. Wharton pers. comm. 1992). Further studies of possible egg larval parasitoids are clearly desirable.

Another group of potential importance is formed by the Indo-Pacific species of the genus Diachasmimorpha. Several species were introduced to Hawaii, but only two (D. longicaudata and D. tryoni) became firmly established. The various colour morphs of D. longicaudata, described as separate varieties, may well be adapted to different hosts or specific micro-habitats. If so, those that became adapted to Hawaiian conditions may not necessarily be best suited for quite different tephritid hosts in other situations (Wharton 1989a).

Parasitoids that oviposit into the puparium have been largely neglected because of sampling difficulties and they also deserve further attention.

Under favourable conditions and with a suitable host (the oriental fruit fly) F. arisanus can achieve parasitisation levels up to 70%. When the larval parasitoids Fopius vandenboschi, Diachasmimorpha longicaudata and Psyttalia incisi are also present they
are capable of causing a little additional mortality, with other species, such as *Tetrastichus giffardianus* and *Aceratoneuromyia indica*, together causing useful but even lower mortality. This guild of parasitoids assembled in Hawaii is reported to have caused such a significant reduction in the population of the oriental fruit fly that some poorly favoured hosts, which were formerly attacked when fly densities were high, became entirely free from damage and even a proportion of usually favoured hosts escaped attack (Clausen et al. 1965). Nevertheless, poisoned protein bait sprays and male lures, together with systemic surface sprays are used both by commercial growers and backyard gardeners to achieve a high level of freedom from fruit fly attack. Such measures are too expensive for routine use by most traditional farmers in Pacific countries.

Over the decade following the establishment of *Fopius arisanus* and *Diachasmimorpha longicaudata* in Fiji, fruit damage (mainly caused by *Bactrocera passiflorae* and *B. xanthodes*) is reported to have diminished, although not to the same extent as with *B. dorsalis* in Hawaii. One possibility is that *B. passiflorae* and *B. xanthodes* are less suitable hosts for the parasitoids than *Bactrocera dorsalis*. Another is that the Fijian fruit flies may be less effectively attacked in some host fruits than in others, for example through the well known habit of *Fopius arisanus* paying little attention to fallen fruit. Thus any fruit fly species that oviposits in fallen fruit, as does *Bactrocera passiflorae*, is likely to escape attack there by this species. A less likely third possibility that remains to be explored, is that the mortality produced by the introduced parasitoids has little more than replaced that caused earlier by native parasitoids. An even lower impact than in Fiji has been reported on the Queensland fruit fly following the establishment of *Fopius arisanus* in Australia. Any or all of the three possible explanations discussed above may also apply in this case.

The conclusion emerging from the foregoing is that it would not be possible to predict the effects of introducing parasitoids to the oceanic Pacific without more information on such matters as (i) whether the target fruit flies are suitable hosts for the candidate parasitoids (ii) what level of parasitisation, if any, is already being achieved by native or already introduced parasitoids, (iii) whether the target fruit flies commonly oviposit in fallen fruit and (iv) what are the major hosts of the target fruit flies. Nevertheless, if parasitoid establishment does occur, it is logical to assume that there will be a reduction in abundance of adult fruit flies, whether or not this is of practical significance.

These considerations should next be examined in the context of the three situations in which fruit fly control is desired by Pacific countries.

1. **Export produce.** Complete freedom from living fruit fly stages is demanded and, to achieve this, it is essential either to eradicate all fruit flies that infest export produce or to have some effective and acceptable commodity treatment that kills all eggs and larvae, but does not damage the produce. Commodity treatment may take the form of fumigation, heat, cold, radiation treatment or a combination of these. Biological control will not eliminate the need for an effective treatment, but any decrease in adult abundance (and hence intensity of attack on host fruit) will provide some added security that the treatment will be effective, since fewer eggs and larvae are likely to be present.

2. **Produce for the local market.** Freedom from fruit fly attack is highly desirable, but not essential. This standard of freedom may be achieved by the farmer selecting for sale produce that is, or appears to be, sound, by picking it green and so still insusceptible to fruit fly oviposition, by bagging it on the tree or vine before ripening, or (probably less frequently) by chemical means. Any reduction in adult fruit fly abundance that leads to lessened oviposition in favoured hosts, or to freedom from oviposition in less favoured hosts, will be valuable.
3. Produce for home or village consumption. Biological control of fruit flies will be of greatest value in this situation, where sound portions of infested fruit are often eaten and chemicals seldom used. This is also the situation where levels of parasitisation are likely to be highest, firstly because insecticides are unlikely to be present to have an adverse effect on the parasitoids and secondly, because of lack of synchrony of plantings, all stages of fruit fly hosts are likely to be available for parasitisation over extended periods. This encourages the build up of parasitoids to maximum attainable levels.

To sum up, the establishment of fruit fly parasitoids in the oceanic Pacific will almost certainly result in some reduction in the abundance of the target pest(s) but, with existing knowledge, it is not possible to predict whether the degree of reduction will be really valuable (as in Hawaii), useful but not really adequate (as in Fiji) or of little significance (as in Australia). There is no evidence to suggest that parasitoid establishment would result in any adverse effects. Establishment of parasitoids is likely to be of greatest value to the traditional farmer, of some value for reducing infestation in produce destined for the local market, but of far more limited value for export produce.

If biological control is to be attempted, one of the essential first steps would be to establish whether each target species will serve as a suitable host for each candidate parasitoid. If not, there would be no justification for releasing it in the field against that species. Although it would be desirable to establish a laboratory colony of the flies for this purpose, infested fruit collected in the field and exposed to the parasite in the laboratory will serve to establish whether parasitisation occurs and whether high levels can be attained. Depending upon the parasitoid species involved, it will be necessary to supply fruit containing eggs or young or older larvae. Of course, this rather artificial test will not indicate whether the parasitoid’s behaviour will permit it to search, for example, in fallen fruits or cucurbits on the ground. It is thus only a first step to exclude clearly irrelevant species on such grounds as whether the host encapsulates the parasitoid egg, or is nutritionally or otherwise unacceptable. A further problem is that a number of tephritid parasitoids have been uncooperative under caged conditions, even when supplied with their native hosts.

The situation with the melon fly Bactrocera cucurbitae is rather different from that of fruit flies native to the Pacific. This is because its main attack is on Cucurbitaceae, which are not hosts of most other Pacific fruit fly species, although B. xanthodes has caused problems in Tonga in export watermelons which were not sound. Probably because of the lack of significant competition for the hosts that it prefers, B. cucurbitae has spread successfully to a number of countries (Hawaii 1895, Guam 1936, Papua New Guinea 1980, Nauru 1982, Solomon Is 1984, Kiribati 1987). In Solomon Is it will doubtless spread still further eastwards and southwards, providing a very serious threat to Vanuatu and the southwest Pacific. Any impediment to this spread, such as eradication from Nauru and reduction of populations elsewhere by the establishment of parasitoids, may be economically rewarding. It is clear that, under some circumstances, as demonstrated initially in Hawaii, the establishment of Psyttalia fletcheri can produce a valuable reduction in host infestation. A useful level of impact may be possible on melon fly in Papua New Guinea and Solomon Is. There thus appear to be sound reasons for giving serious consideration to establishing P. fletcheri (and perhaps other melon fly parasitoids) in both countries. Of other possible parasitoids, Diachasmimorpha dacusii produces significant parasitisation of melon fly in India and thus might be considered seriously, in spite of the fact that the release of some 100,000 adults in Hawaii failed to result in its establishment. Other melon fly parasitoids that might merit further study are Diachasmimorpha albobalteatus and Fopius skinneri. Then again, if F. arisanus were
established in both Papua New Guinea and Solomon Is it would doubtless parasitise a small number of *Bactrocera cucurbitae* eggs and kill others without parasite development, particularly when its fruit fly hosts occurred in the same vegetables or fruits as the melon fly. However, higher priority should clearly be given to a thorough search within the natural range of the melon fly for parasitoids that colonise it effectively in cultivated plants, or its puparia in the soil in cultivated areas.
Figure 3.1 World distribution of *Icerya aegyptiaca*
Icerya aegyptiaca (Douglas)

Hemiptera: Margarodidae
breadfruit mealybug, Egyptian fluted scale, Egyptian mealybug.

Figure 3.2 Pacific distribution of Icerya aegyptiaca

Icerya aegyptiaca is probably of Indian or Oriental origin. It is widespread in Asia and also present in a number of tropical and subtropical countries in Africa. It is uncommon in northern Australia, widespread in Micronesia and a major pest in Kiribati and several atolls in the Federated States of Micronesia.

It is specially damaging to breadfruit in the Pacific, but also attacks avocado, banana, citrus, taro and many other plants of food or ornamental importance. On breadfruit the mealybug is usually found along the midribs and larger veins on the undersides of the leaves, and also on the fruit. Heavy infestations reduce yield and may even kill the tree. Copious amounts of honeydew are secreted which provide a substrate for an abundant growth of sooty moulds which seriously interferes with photosynthesis.

In the western part of its presumed native range (Pakistan and India) it is preyed upon by at least two native coccinellid beetles, Rodolia breviuscula and Pullus coccidovora, and attacked by at least two promising parasitoids, especially the fly Cryptochetum grandicorne, but also a wasp Tetrastichus sp.. In the eastern part of its native range (China) there is a further coccinellid predator, Rodolia pumila, which has been used effectively for biological control in the high islands of Micronesia. R. pumila is believed to be specific to Icerya spp. and closely related scales and appears to be the species of choice for biological control of I. aegyptiaca in the Pacific. However, it appears to have died out from substantial segments, at least, of a number of low coral atolls, possibly after reducing the abundance of its hosts so low that it starved to death. If this sequence is confirmed, it would be well worth while to investigate one or more of the parasitoids and the other predators mentioned, since they may be better able to co-exist with the host at low densities.
Origin
This species is probably of Indian or Oriental origin. It was described by Douglas in 1890 from females collected the previous year from a serious outbreak on fruit trees in Alexandria, Egypt but, in spite of its specific name, it is not native to Egypt.

Distribution
*I. aegyptiaca* now occurs in tropical and subtropical Africa, Asia, Australia and certain Pacific islands (Figures 1 and 2). Except for the region extending from West Pakistan to Micronesia, its occurrence appears to be contained within relatively limited areas. Apart from a report from Kew Gardens, England (Green 1917), it is not known from Europe or the Americas, although it has been intercepted occasionally at United States ports (Anon. 1960).

In Asia the mealybug is known from China, Hong Kong, India, Israel, Japan, Malaysia, Myanmar, Pakistan, Philippines, Sarawak, Sri Lanka, Taiwan and Thailand (Anon. 1960, 1966).

In Africa it is present in Egypt, Ivory Coast, Kenya, Somalia, Sudan and Tanzania (Anon. 1966).

In Australia it is recorded from New South Wales (Froggatt 1906, 1921, Maskell 1894), Northern Territory (P. Gullen pers. comm. 1990) and Queensland (Brimblecombe 1959). However, it is probable that the mealybug occurs continuously only in far northern Australia, since recent intensive searches have failed to find it in southern Queensland (D. Sands pers. comm. 1992).

In the oceanic Pacific it is known from Micronesia. This includes the Federated States of Micronesia (Palau, Yap, Chuuk, Pohnpei, Kosrae), the Marianas (Agiguan, Anathan, Cocos, Guam, Pagan, Rota, Saipan, Tinian), Marshall Is, Wake Is, Kiribati and Nauru (Anon. 1960, Beardsley 1966, Esquerre 1991, Maddison 1976, Oakley 1946, 1953, Waterhouse 1991a, Williams 1985b). It does not appear to be present in Tuvalu (T. Teii pers. comm. 1989). Although it has been recorded from Fiji, specimens labelled Fiji in the British Museum (Natural History) were intercepted there from Kiribati. There are no specimens of *I. aegyptiaca* among the enormous collection in the British Museum of scales from Melanesia and Polynesia (D.J. Williams pers. comm. 1989). This throws serious doubt (Williams and Watson 1990) on the correct identification of its presence in Vanuatu (Bennett et al. 1976), French Polynesia (Tahiti) (Doane and Hadden 1909) and American Samoa (Dumbleton 1957). It seems probable that it was confused with the related *Icerya seychellarum*.

Beardsley (1955) suggests that *I. aegyptiaca* may have gained entry into Micronesia from Taiwan, but just when is not documented. It was often intercepted in quarantine prior to 1922 in Yokohama on plants from the Marshall islands (Kuwana 1922) and pre-1928 records are available for Palau (Federated States of Micronesia), Saipan and Tinian (Mariana Is) (Beardsley 1955, Esaki 1940a, b, Sakimura 1935, Takahashi 1939). However, Swezey (1940) did not record its presence in Guam during his 1936 survey of pests of cultivated plants, including breadfruit, so it may not yet have been introduced there at that time.

The first record for Kiribati (Butaritari, Makin, Tarawa) is 1953 (Hall 1953), for Fiji 1961 (Anon. 1966), for Nauru 1980 (Williams 1985b) and for French Polynesia (Tahiti) 1908 (Doane and Hadden 1909). The earliest record for the general region is 1893 for New South Wales (Maskell 1894).

Life Cycle
The life cycle and anatomy of *I. aegyptiaca* has been studied in some detail in Egypt (Azab et al. 1969). Only females occur and most stages are present all year round. The duration of the life cycle stages, when grown on sprouting potato tubers, is shown in Table 3.1 with, in brackets, the temperatures at which the observations were made. The
duration of the life cycle ranged from an average of 105.4 days at 26.4°C to 87.2 days at 28.7°C. Each year there were two full generations and a partial third, with a peak in adult abundance in summer. After a pre-oviposition period of 10 to 20 days, females laid an average of 70 eggs at 24.1°C, or 143 at 27.3°C (or 150 to 200 eggs, Anon. 1960), into a waxy egg sac (average length 4.4 mm), attached ventrally to the tip of the abdomen. The yellowish-orange eggs are oval and average 0.65 mm x 0.34 mm. The egg sac is ruptured by the emerging first instar larvae (nymphs). These bright orange crawlers settle within a day and become covered by a waxy covering within two days. Near the anus there develops a long, waxy, thread-like filament which receives droplets of honeydew as they are discharged. Antennae are six-segmented. The second instar larvae are yellow to orange, oval, average 1.43 mm x 0.98 mm and are soon covered with a white mealy secretion. They are fringed with 21 snow-white waxy processes. One process comes from the midpoint of the posterior end of the abdomen, six from either side of the abdomen and four from either side of the thorax. Antennae are six-segmented. Third instar larvae average 2.2 mm x 1.5 mm. They are yellow to orange and are covered with a white mealy secretion and their 21 stout, tapering, snow-white processes are about 2.5 mm long. Antennae are nine (rarely eight)-segmented. The deep orange adult (Plate 1, Fig. 5) is broadly oval, and averages 3.1 mm x 2.2 mm (or 5 to 7 mm x 3 to 4 mm, Rao 1950). Its abdomen is slightly convex dorsally and flattened ventrally. The legs are blackish and the antennae are 11-segmented. The dorsal surface is covered with cushions of white mealy secretion, mingled with granular wax. Through this waxy covering the body appears salmon-pink. Of the 21 waxy processes, those on the thorax reach 3 mm in length and are considerably stouter than the 8 paired abdominal processes, which average 4 mm (Azab et al. 1969).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stage</th>
<th>Preoviposition</th>
<th>Oviposition</th>
<th>Egg incubation</th>
<th>1st instar</th>
<th>2nd instar</th>
<th>3rd instar</th>
<th>Duration of life cycle</th>
<th>Adult longevity</th>
<th>Number of eggs/female</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Stage</td>
<td>16.6(22.9°)</td>
<td>33.5(24.2°)</td>
<td>10(24.0°)</td>
<td>14.2(25.6°)</td>
<td>42.3(27.3°)</td>
<td>8.6(29.7°)</td>
<td>105.4(26.4°)</td>
<td>15.0(29.0°)</td>
<td>15.0(29.0°)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The cuticle of the dorsum is covered with many hairs of several sizes, those of the margins of the abdomen being larger and arranged in small groups. A few long setae are present in the anal region (Rao 1950). Details of the wax-secreting and other glands and morphological characteristics of *I. aegyptiaca* and other species of *Icerya* that occur in the Orient are provided by Green (1932) and Rao (1950).

Although there is casual mention, in brief accounts (Bodenheimer 1924, O’Connor 1969), of male *I. aegyptiaca*, only females are recorded by many other authors and no males have been found in extensive collections (D.J. Williams, pers. comm. 1990). Adult *I. aegyptiaca* females are parthenogenetic and not hermaphroditic (Hughes-Schrader 1963). On the other hand, the notorious cottony cushion scale *Icerya purchasi* is a self-fertilising hermaphrodite, externally seemingly female, but having an ovotestis. In *I. purchasi*, males are produced very occasionally, so that cross-fertilisation is possible.
(White 1979). Alate males occasionally develop also in the related *I. seychellarum* and it is suggested that hermaphroditism may exist in this species also (Williams and Watson 1990).

**Pest status**

The greatest economic impact of *I. aegyptiaca* in the Pacific is on the breadfruit tree *Artocarpus altilis*, of which many taxa are grown in the region. On many of the low coral atolls in the Pacific, which necessarily have a very limited agricultural potential, breadfruit is second only in value to the coconut. So important is the crop in Micronesia that, at harvest, excess breadfruit is pounded into a paste and stored in rock-lined pits for future use. In addition, Micronesian peoples traditionally depend on breadfruit timber for making ocean-going canoes for fishing and travel (Beardsley 1955).

Although it may infest the fruit, *I. aegyptiaca* is usually situated along the midribs (Plate 1, Fig. 4) and larger veins on the undersides of the breadfruit leaves. The large quantities of sap removed by the mealybugs cause immature leaves and stems to dry up and die. Heavy infestations may, in fact, kill even mature breadfruit trees (Clausen 1978a, Pemberton 1954), but more usually the trees are partially defoliated and the crop reduced, sometimes by 50%, or more. In addition to these direct effects, the mealybugs produce large quantities of honeydew, which provide a substrate for an abundant growth of sooty moulds, covering the upper surfaces of all but the youngest leaves of heavily infested trees and seriously interfering with photosynthesis (Beardsley 1955). Prolonged dry weather appears to favour the build-up of heavy infestations and, partly due to this factor, populations of *I. aegyptiaca* may vary considerably in abundance from year to year.

In the Pacific important economic plants other than breadfruit that may suffer from heavy mealybug attack include avocado, banana and citrus, and infestations may also occur on taro (*Colocasia esculenta* and *Alocasia macrorrhiza*), pandanus and young coconut palms. Some widely cultivated ornamentals are also hosts. These include roses, *Acalypha wilkesiana*, *Codiaeum variegatum* and *Pseuderanthemum* sp. Several common weeds, such as *Cassia mimosoides* and *Jatropha gossypifolium* are commonly infested (Beardsley 1955). In the Gilbert and Ellice Is (probably referring to Kiribati) Manser (1974) listed as hosts not only breadfruit (*Artocarpus altilis*), but also banana, citrus, coconut, *Calophyllum inophyllum*, *Casuarina equisetifolia*, *Cyrtosperma chamissonis* (babai), *Ficus tinctoria* (wild fig, *te boro*), *Ipomoea tuba*, *Pluchea odorata* and *Scaevola frutescens*. Letters on file indicate that pandanus and papaya are hosts and the worst affected ornamental is a red-leaf *Coleus* sp. (G.S. Sandhu pers. comm. 1989). Maddison (1976) added tomato and Williams and Watson (1990) *Lugwigia capitata*, *Musa paradisiaca*, *Pemphis acidula*, *Pluchea indica*, *Scaevola koenigi*, *Syndrella nodiflora* (tearama), *Vernonia* sp. and *Zea mays*. On Butaritari, infestations on breadfruit may be serious enough to prevent them from bearing any crop (Teuriaria 1988). Although it has been recorded in Tahiti for at least 35 years it has not yet been found on breadfruit. However, it may have been mistaken for *Icerya seychellarum*, so the record needs confirmation.

The mealybug was recorded from *Acacia*, *Citrus*, *Coffea*, locust, *Psidium*, and roses (Doane and Hadden 1909, Rao 1950), but it is not an important pest and is seldom found (P. Putoa pers. comm. 1989).

*I. aegyptiaca* is generally uncommon in Australia, but continues to be reported from time to time in the Northern Territory from *Acalypha* sp., *Andrographis paniculata*, coconut, croton, mango and *Mimosa pigra* (P. Gullen pers. comm. 1990). In the Darwin area it can be a minor pest from time to time of decorative plants, particularly palms. It seems probable that the few records from further south are due to the mealybug surviving temporarily on plants brought from the north or on host plants to which these mealybugs transferred. Many additional host plants are reported in other countries. Examples of economic host plants include: East Africa: coffee, date palm, fig, mulberry, rose (Fiedler
1950, Lindinger 1913, Newstead 1917, Ritchie 1929, 1930), Egypt: citrus, fig, guava, mango, rose (Abul-Naser et al. 1976, Azab et al. 1969, Hall 1924, Tawfik 1969), Pakistan: coffee, fig, guava, tea (Mahdihassan 1976, Muzaffar 1970), India: breadfruit, citrus, custard apple, fig, guava, jackfruit, mulberry, rose (Ayyar 1919, Glover 1935, Rao 1950, Siddapapaji et al. 1984), Bangladesh: jackfruit, hizol, croton, sunflower, guava, pomegranate, rose (Ullah and Chowdhury 1988), Sri Lanka: pomegranate, rose (Hutson 1929, Speyer 1918), Japan: citrus (Rao 1950), China: citrus (Silvestri 1929), Taiwan: citrus, tea (Shiraki 1920, Takahashi 1937), Philippines: citrus, mulberry (Rao 1950). Although a few of these records indicate economic damage as a result of I. aegyptiaca infestation, the majority simply list its presence without special mention of its importance. In some instances, I. purchasi and/or I. seychellarum were also noted as being present.

It is possible that there may be strains of I. aegyptiaca with different host preferences. Thus Esaki (1940a) recorded it as a major pest of citrus in Micronesia, but made no mention of its occurrence on breadfruit on Guam or Palau, although he listed other breadfruit pests, and Swezey (1940) also made no mention of it attacking breadfruit in Guam in his survey there in 1936, once again listing other breadfruit pests. It is still rare on breadfruit and other hosts in Guam (D. Nafus pers. comm. 1990) Takahashi (1936b) recorded it in Saipan on avocado and in Tapocho on cotton, but in neither place from breadfruit. However, in 1941 he recorded it in Chuuk on breadfruit.

In what is probably its native range, the abundance of I. aegyptiaca varies considerably from place to place. Thus, in Pakistan it was recorded only in coastal and subcoastal areas around Karachi and Thatta, being more abundant in the former area, possibly because of a preference for a comparatively mild and damp climate (Muzaffar 1970). In Taiwan Takahashi (1937) states that it was not found in the mountains, although it was common at low elevations.

**Control Measures**

There are very few papers dealing with the chemical control of I. aegyptiaca. Early reports (Beshir and Hosny 1939, Glover 1935, Shafik and Husni 1939) indicated that tar distillate, kerosene soap or mineral oil emulsions were effective. More recently, Yadav and Reddy (1982) found that monocrotophos gave effective control of the mealybug on Ficus glomerata. White oil has been used in Kiribati and also a commercial mixture of pirimiphos methyl and permethrin (G.S. Sandhu pers. comm. 1989). Paucity of recommendations for chemical control suggests either that damaging outbreaks are sporadic in most countries, or that effective biological control is frequently attained.

**Natural enemies**

The main natural enemies of I. aegyptiaca are shown in Table 3.2. It appears that the most important are predaceous coccinellids of the genus Rodolia (Plate 1, Fig. 6), although too little is known about the effectiveness of the two dipterous and three hymenopterous parasitoids listed. In addition to these records there is a comment by Maskell (1894) that specimens of I. aegyptiaca obtained from Madras were accompanied by parasitoids which, unfortunately, were not identified.

The most comprehensive papers on the natural enemies are those of Muzaffar (1970, 1974) for the coastal and subcoastal areas around Karachi and Thatta (West Pakistan). Of the two predatory beetles present, Rodolia ruficollis fed voraciously on all stages of Icerya and invaded heavy infestations, whereas Pullus coccidivora, whose feeding capacity was reported to be low, turned its attention particularly to eggs and first instar larvae in both low and high host densities. One R. ruficollis was reported present for every 500 to 2,700 mealybugs on Phoenix dactylifera as plant host and one to three P. coccidivora were found feeding in 2 to 5% of Icerya egg clusters. The parasitisation rate by the fly
Cryptochetum grandicorne on the 4 plant hosts on which it attacked I. aegyptiaca in the coastal area was 3 to 22% on Erythrina sp., Morus alba and Phoenix dactylifera and 5.4 to 38.4% on Rosa indica. C. grandicorne was not present in subcoastal areas, possibly due to lower humidity. Attack by the wasp Tetrastichus sp. and the predator P. coccidivora occurred on all kinds of host plant infested by I. aegyptiaca, whereas C. grandicorne and the predator R. ruficollis were absent from several plant species.

Table 3.2  Main natural enemies of *Icerya aegyptiaca*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Insect</th>
<th>Location recorded</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Neuroptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHRYSOPIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chrysopa spp.</td>
<td>Micronesia</td>
<td>Beardsley 1955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chrysopa basalis</td>
<td>Kiribati</td>
<td>Manser 1974</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chrysoperla carnea</td>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td>Azab et al. 1969</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Coleoptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COCCINELLIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coelophora inaequalis</td>
<td>Likiep</td>
<td>Beardsley 1955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cryptolaemus montrouzieri</td>
<td>Saipan, Palau, Yap</td>
<td>Esaki 1940a, Schreiner 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harmonia octomaculata (= H. arcuata)</td>
<td>Likiep, Jaluit</td>
<td>Beardsley 1955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Menochilus sexmaculatus</td>
<td>Pakistan</td>
<td>Muzaffar 1970, 1974</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pullus coccidivora</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Chapin 1965, Glover 1939, Subramaniam 1954</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rodolia breviuscula</td>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td>Azab et al. 1969, Marchal 1908</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Guam</td>
<td>Dumbleton 1957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Kiribati</td>
<td>Dumbleton 1957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Malta</td>
<td>Borg 1930</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>Esaki 1940a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Saipan</td>
<td>Esaki 1940a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Society Is</td>
<td>Dumbleton 1957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R. cardinalis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R. pumila</td>
<td>see Table 3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R. ruficollis</td>
<td>Pakistan</td>
<td>Muzaffar 1970, 1974</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rodolia sp.</td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>Dumbleton 1957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scymnus sp.</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Siddapapaji et al. 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Diptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CRYPTOCHETIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cryptochetum grandicorne</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Subramaniam 1949</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pakistan</td>
<td>Muzaffar 1970, 1974</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TACHINIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Masicera sp.</td>
<td>Sri Lanka</td>
<td>Hutson 1922</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hymenoptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EULOPHIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tetrastichus sp.</td>
<td>Pakistan</td>
<td>Muzaffar 1970, 1974</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Bangladesh</td>
<td>Ullah &amp; Chowdhury 1988</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PTEROMAUDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oricoruna arcotensis (= Pachycrepoides coorgensis)</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Bouček 1978</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Mani &amp; Kurian 1953</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Parasitisation by *Tetrastichus* sp. was higher in the subcoastal than the coastal area and occurred on all plants, irrespective of the degree of infestation. Thus, it parasitised 5.4 to 14.5% of mealybugs on *Psidium guajava* in the subcoastal and 1.6 to 5.4% in the coastal area. Parasitisation was highest on *Morus alba*, being 13 to 19% in the subcoastal area. An average of 2 *Tetrastichus* sp. adults could develop in a second instar mealybug, 5 in a third instar, and 12 in an adult female.

In India collections of *I. aegyptiaca* from rose and croton showed up to a maximum of 90% parasitisation by *Cryptochetum grandicorne*, with a lower level of 20% (Subramaniam 1949). This suggests that, under appropriate conditions, this parasitoid can be very important.

In Bangladesh *I. aegyptiaca* is attacked by the parasitoid *Tetrastichus purpureus*, the ladybird *Menochilus sexmaculatus* and probably by spiders. Nevertheless, it is sometimes regarded as a pest of guava and croton (*Codiaeum variegatum*) (Chowdhury pers. comm. 1992, Ullah and Chowdhury 1988).

*I. aegyptiaca* occurs, together with *I. purchasi* and *I. seychellarum* in the Darwin area of northern Australia. No parasitoids have been reared from *I. aegyptiaca* in current preliminary surveys, although two species of *Cryptochetum* and other parasitoids have emerged from the other two mealybugs. All three species are preyed upon by *Rodolia* spp. (D. Sands pers. comm. 1992).

**Attempts at Biological Control**

**EGYPT**

*I. aegyptiaca* was reported as a serious pest of citrus, figs and shade trees in Egypt about 1890. With the recently recorded spectacular success against *I. purchasi* of *Rodolia cardinalis* in mind, that predator was introduced from California in 1892 and, with a nucleus of only six beetles, establishment was obtained. This resulted in successful biological control (Clausen 1978a, Marchal 1908).

**ISRAEL**

Neither the fly *Cryptochetum iceryae* nor the South African coccinellid *Rodolia iceryae* were able to develop on *Icerya aegyptiaca*, although the latter was successfully attacked by *Rodolia cardinalis* (Mendel and Blumberg 1991).

**MICRONESIA**

The documentation of the many attempts at biological control of *I. aegyptiaca* in Micronesia is far from complete (Tables 3.3, 3.4). Three factors contribute to uncertainty regarding what actually happened. One is the absence of information on when this mealybug arrived in the various regions, a situation complicated by confused identifications caused by the presence, at times, of *I. purchasi* (now known to have been in Guam, Wake Is, Eniwetok and Kwajalein (Marshalls) and Tarawa (Kiribati)) and of *I. seychellarum* in Palau, Yap, Caroline atolls, Ocean Is, Kiribati and Tuvalu (Beardsley 1966, D.J. Williams pers. comm. 1989). Another is that *R. cardinalis* was obtained from Hawaii and released in Guam in 1926 against *I. purchasi* (but not against *I. aegyptiaca*) (Nafus and Schreiner 1989, Vandenberg 1928). This introduction resulted in extremely low populations of both pest and predator, leading Vandenberg (1928) to suggest that reintroductions of the predator might be necessary every few years. However, an outbreak of *I. purchasi* in Guam in 1929 was quickly brought under control by the predator, thereby lessening those fears (Vandenberg 1931). Nevertheless, it is interesting that *R. cardinalis* was last recorded in the region in 1945 (Chapin 1965, Nafus and Schreiner 1989). The disappearance of *R. cardinalis* is possibly correlated with the establishment (see below) of *R. pumila* (D. Nafus pers. comm. 1990).
Table 3.3  Introductions of *Rodolia pumila* to Micronesia against *Icerya aegyptiaca*. Schreiner (1989) source of all records not otherwise referenced.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Release Site</th>
<th>Source</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Established (recovery date)</th>
<th>Comments</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Palau State</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ulithi</td>
<td>1971</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ulithi atoll</td>
<td>Saipan</td>
<td>1948</td>
<td>+(1950)</td>
<td>Beardsley 1955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1954</td>
<td>+(1957)</td>
<td>but serious outbreak in 1964</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1964</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>but serious outbreak in 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Truk State</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mortlock Is</td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1964</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Losap</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>pre 1941</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Beardsley 1955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nama</td>
<td>Pis islet</td>
<td>1949</td>
<td>+(1950)</td>
<td>Beardsley 1955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Losap</td>
<td>1950</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Losap</td>
<td>1954</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Beardsley 1955, but later reported absent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Losap</td>
<td>1964</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1960</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pis</td>
<td>Rota</td>
<td>1947</td>
<td>+(1949,1954)</td>
<td>Beardsley 1955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Ponape State</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ngetik</td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1970</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1977</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Kosrae State</strong></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1976</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>died in transit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Mariana Is</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anathanan</td>
<td>Belau</td>
<td>1959</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Nafus &amp; Schreiner 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rota</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>+(1947)</td>
<td>Pemberton 1948</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Saipan</td>
<td>Taiwan</td>
<td>1928</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Beardsley 1955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Marshall Is</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alinglaplap</td>
<td>Guam</td>
<td>1949</td>
<td>+(1950)</td>
<td>Beardsley 1955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aur</td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1977</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1954</td>
<td>-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1958</td>
<td>-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1961</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>but eliminated by typhoon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1964</td>
<td>+</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kwajalain</td>
<td>Guam</td>
<td>1949</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>but then disappeared, Beardsley 1955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1953</td>
<td>+(1958)</td>
<td>present in 1959, Beardsley* 1959</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1965</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1980's</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>not seen in 1987</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lac</td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1953</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Majuro</td>
<td>Kwajalein</td>
<td>1963</td>
<td>-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau?</td>
<td>1964</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>declined even before scales gone: perhaps present in 1970</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1971</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1972</td>
<td>+</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1980's</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rongelap</td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1972</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>but scale outbreaks reported later</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1973</td>
<td>?</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* The record in this paper of the presence also of *Rodolia breviuscula* is due to a misidentification of *R. pumila* (J. Beardsley pers. comm. 1990)
Table 3.4  Introductions of natural enemies of *Icerya aegyptiaca* other than *Rodolia pumila*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Agent &amp; Location</th>
<th>Source</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Established</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>Cryptolaemus montrouzieri</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>+(1940)</td>
<td>Esaki 1940a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mariana Is</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Saipan</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Federated States of Micronesia</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Palau</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Rodolia breviuscula</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mariana Is</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>1948</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Chapin 1965, Dumbleton 1957, Pemberton 1954, Subramaniam 1954</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guam</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>1948</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Chapin 1965, Pemberton 1953</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marshall Is</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>1948</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Chapin 1965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Majuro</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Uliga</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Rodolia cardinalis</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td>California</td>
<td>1892</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Marchal 1908</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiribati</td>
<td>Butaritari</td>
<td>1953</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>Hall 1953</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mariana Is</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guam</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>1926</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Dumbleton 1957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Saipan</td>
<td>Taiwan</td>
<td>1928</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>Dumbleton 1957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marshall Is</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kwajalein</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Clagg 1959, Schreiner 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Likeap</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Schreiner 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The third factor is that *R. pumila*, the only widespread coccinellid now attacking *I. aegyptiaca* in Micronesia, was brought in at some time before 1941 to Saipan, probably from Taiwan, but was at that time referred to as *R. cardinalis*, although it lacked the latter’s characteristic spots (Beardsley 1955). There are no records of *R. pumila* being intentionally moved within the Marianas at that time, although it has since been suggested that it must either have spread accidentally or have been widely distributed by the occupying Japanese forces. Indeed, a Chuuk islander recalled a red beetle being released about 1940 in Losap (Chuuk State) (Beardsley 1955). It is interesting that *R. pumila* was introduced from China to Hawaii in 1895 against *I. purchasi*, but apparently failed to establish (Lai and Funasaki 1986).

The outcome of these releases (Table 3.3) was that *R. pumila* had been established on most of the high islands of Micronesia by the 1950s (Beardsley 1955, Chapin 1965) and that *Icerya* is no longer considered as a pest there (Schreiner 1989). More recently, *R. pumila* was introduced (in 1977) to the high island of Kosrae (Federated States of Micronesia), its presence recorded in 1984, and mealybugs reported to be uncommon in 1986 (Schreiner 1989).

In contrast with these results on high islands are those for atolls, where fragmentary information suggests that *R. pumila* has been less successful. As can be seen in Table 3.3, it has been repeatedly introduced to some atolls, but it is seldom clear whether it has really become established, whether it has died out at some time after temporary establishment, or whether it might have been present ever since the first introduction. Schreiner (1989)
suggests that, on very small atolls, some of which have areas of only a few hectares, *R. pumila* may have died out once scale populations were reduced to very low levels. Since *Rodolia* is reported to be a specific predator of *Icerya* and related scales, and since it requires to consume a number of hosts in order to develop, this is quite possible. She also suggests that typhoons may have played a part in eliminating the predator.

Although *R. pumila* was reported on Kwajalein (Marshall Is) in 1950, it could not be found in 1953, possibly due to the liberal use there of DDT to control flies and mosquitoes. With the exception of Kwajalein, *I. aegyptiaca* is no longer a serious problem on any of the larger islands where *R. pumila* has been introduced. However, on the low island of Jaluit it was abundant in 1989 and *R. pumila* could not be found, although it had been introduced and established several times previously (Table 3.3). *I. aegyptiaca* was also common on Majuro and Likiep, but so was *R. pumila* (D. Nafus pers. comm. 1990). *R. pumila* is also known to control *Steatococcus samaraius* in the Palau Is and may be largely responsible for the scarcity of *Icerya seychellarum* in both Yap and Palau (Beardsley 1955).

*Rodolia breviuscula* was introduced in 1948 from India to Guam, but the few individuals liberated failed to establish the species (Table 3.4). Another coccinellid *Cryptolaemus montouzieri* was established in Saipan and Palau in 1940 (Esaki 1940a). This species has occasionally been observed attacking *I. aegyptiaca* in the Mariana Is (Beardsley 1955). Two coccinellids that have found their way into the Pacific are recorded as attacking *I. aegyptiaca* in the Marshall Is, *Coelophora inaequalis* at Likiep and *Harmonia octomaculata* at both Likiep and at Jaluit Atoll (Beardsley 1955). The former is predominantly a predator on aphids.

Adults and larvae of green lacewings (*Chrysopa* spp.) were observed at Likiep preying on *I. aegyptiaca* and greatly reducing their numbers. They also brought about considerable reduction on Fais (Palau State) and Lae (Marshall Is). At Fais many *Chrysopa* pupae were attacked by a hymenopterous parasitoid, possibly *Isodromus* sp. (Beardsley 1955).

Entomogenous fungi may also play an important part in the natural control of *Icerya* spp., particularly during wet weather, although few details are available (Beardsley 1955).

**KIRIBATI**

*I. aegyptiaca* was first reported in 1953 on the two northernmost islands of the group, Makin and Butaritari (where the Americans had a station) and some months later was found on Tarawa. It now occurs on all 16 islands in the Tungaru group, extending from Makin to Arorae (G.S. Sandhu pers. comm. 1989). In 1953, very shortly after it was first reported, *R. cardinalis* from Fiji was liberated on Butaritari (Hall 1953) (Table 3.5). It increased very rapidly in numbers and spread extensively. In September 1955, 12 adult

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Origin</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Established</th>
<th>Comment</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>Rodolia cardinalis</em></td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>1953</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>On Butaritari. Established but died out later.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>1962</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>On Marakei. Established, but died out later.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Guam</td>
<td>1975</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>From R. Muniappan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Guam</td>
<td>1978</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>From R. Muniappan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1977</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>From Otobed. Dead on arrival.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>1979</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>From Otobed, released on Butaritari. Later could not be found.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
ladybirds were transferred to Betio (on Tarawa) and in May 1956 some were sent to Fiji for identification. They proved not to be *R. cardinalis*, but another widespread species, possibly *Harmonia octomaculata* (= *Coccinella arcuata*). In April 1957 it was reported that *R. cardinalis* could no longer be found on Butaritari. *R. cardinalis* was again introduced in 1962, this time to Marakei from Hawaii (Simmonds 1976). A decade later, only one individual was found in 1971-72 by Manser (1974) and *I. aegyptiaca* was reported to be a serious pest, so *R. cardinalis* is clearly unable to maintain high enough populations to be an effective natural enemy.

Meanwhile, in 1971 the introduction of *R. pumila* was recommended by CIBC (Teuriaria 1988) and in 1975 larvae (and pupae) of a presumed *Rodolia* sp. were seen on a number of mealybug infestations on breadfruit on Butaritari (Simmonds 1976). Mealybug numbers were generally low, although abundant sooty mould was present. Whether mealybugs were being controlled by the *Rodolia* sp. or whether they were affected by a preceding long rainy period was not determined.

Ten living *R. pumila* from Guam were liberated on Butaritari in May 1975, but their fate is not recorded (letters on Kiribati files). A small consignment of *R. pumila* from Palau in 1977 arrived with all individuals dead; and one from Guam in 1978, failed to establish. A further shipment from Palau in 1979 was released on infested breadfruit trees on Butaritari, where adults were seen close to the release site two months later (Teuriaria 1988). However no coccinellids were present in September 1989 (N. Teuriaria pers. comm. 1989).

Careful examination of heavy mealybug infestations on breadfruit on Abemama, Butaritari and Tarawa in October 1992 failed to locate coccinellids. It might have been assumed from this that any beetles that had been present at an earlier stage must have died out. However, after careful searching elsewhere, localised (often only small) populations of *I. aegyptiaca* were found, together with larvae and pupae of both *R. cardinalis* (on Tarawa) and *Rodolia pumila* (on Butaritari) (D.P. Sands and G.S. Sandhu pers. comm. 1992). Regular observations, which would present considerable logistic problems, would be necessary to establish whether these coccinellid populations were in the course of disappearing, or whether they were viable; and, if the latter, how soon they would disperse and locate the dense mealybug infestations; also, how rapidly the latter would be reduced to scattered individuals.

*Chrysopa basalis* was seen preying on the mealybug (Manser 1974) and a few empty cocoons of a chrysopid were reported by Simmonds (1976). This green lacewing is a very common predator, but is unable to control the mealybug (G.S. Sandhu pers. comm. 1989).

There is a record of *Icerya seychellarum* from Kiribati (Williams and Watson 1990) and, although *I. purchasi* has been recorded (Beardsley 1966, Manser 1974), it appears to be very rare (G.S. Sandhu pers. comm. 1989).

POLYNESIA

AMERICAN SAMOA

A note on the file of the Entomologist of the Trust Territory suggests that *Rodolia pumila* was sent from Palau to American Samoa and established in 1961 (D. Nafus pers. comm. 1990).

MELANESIA

VANUATU

An unpublished observation by P. Cochereau to the effect that *I. aegyptiaca* had been (probably early 1970s) controlled by the introduction of *R. cardinalis* to Efate is mentioned by Bennett et al. (1976) but, until specimens are available for confirmation, this must be considered a doubtful record.
Major natural enemies

*Rodolia* spp.

The genus *Rodolia* is a small one of Indo-Australian origin. Of the three species introduced to the oceanic Pacific (Tables 3.3, 3.4, 3.5) one, *R. pumila*, is widely established, another, *R. cardinalis* (Table 3.6), appears to be known now only from Hawaii and a third, *R. breviuscula*, failed to establish. It is true that *R. cardinalis* became established in Guam for a period after its introduction in 1926, but it has not been seen since 1946. An introduction of this species from Fiji in 1953 is said to have resulted in its establishment in American Samoa (Dumbleton 1957), but doubt must be cast on the authenticity of this record.

Table 3.6 Introductions of *Rodolia cardinalis* in the oceanic Pacific against *Icerya purchasi* and *I. seychellarum*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Host and Location</th>
<th>Source</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Established</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>A. Icerya purchasi</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Federated States of Micronesia</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Palau</td>
<td>Taiwan</td>
<td>1928</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Dumbleton 1957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Chapin 1965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mariana Is</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>1926</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Chapin 1965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guam</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>1958</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>Pemberton 1958</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marshall Is</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Einwetok</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>1958</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Beardsley 1962,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Clagg</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>1890</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Lai &amp; Funasaki 1986</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>B. Icerya seychellarum</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Society Is</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tahiti</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>1902</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>Dumbleton 1957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1948</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>Dumbleton 1957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>American Samoa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tutuila</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>1952</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>Dumbleton 1957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>1953</td>
<td>?</td>
<td>Bianchi 1954*,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dumbleton 1957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>1953</td>
<td>+</td>
<td>Dumbleton 1957</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Mistakenly said to be against *I. aegyptiaca* which does not occur in American Samoa (J. Beardsley pers. comm. 1990)

Some authors (Dumbleton 1957, Gardner 1958) mention introductions of, or the presence of, a closely related *Rodolia* sp. in the Palau Is, but this was *R. pumila* (J.W. Beardsley pers. comm. 1989).

*R. pumila* can be distinguished from *R. cardinalis* by the uniformly reddish-brown upper surface of the former, compared with the deep red and black upper surface of the latter. The black coloration of *R. cardinalis* occurs on the head, basal margin of the pronotum, the scutellum and markings on the elytra. Adult *R. pumila* are 3.0 to 3.6 mm long and prey on *Icerya* spp. and related scales. They are known to occur naturally in China, Taiwan and Hongkong. Since their assisted distribution, they are also known from Bonin Is (Chichi Jima), Mariana Is (Saipan, Tinian, Rota, Guam, Cocos Is), Palau State
(Babelthuap, Kayangel, Koroi, Ngurukdabel, Ulebsehel, Malakal. Ngerkabesang, Peleliu, Angaur), Yap State (Yap), Chuuk State (Nomwin, Fananu, Tol, Wena, Pis, Nama), Ponpehi State (Ponpehi) and Marshall Is (Kwajalein) (Chapin 1965). However, it is not clear whether populations continue to survive in all these locations. It is interesting that \textit{R. pumila} was introduced in 1895 from China to Hawaii against \textit{Icerya purchasi}, but the outcome is unknown (Lai and Funasaki 1986).

There are records on the Trust Territory Entomologist’s files to suggest that \textit{R. pumila} was sent to American Samoa and may have become established in 1961 (D. Nafus pers. comm. 1990) but, if so, this must have been against \textit{I. purchasi} and/or \textit{I. seychellarum} and not \textit{I. aegyptiaca}.

In view of its widespread dispersal for biological control it is strange that there appear to be no publications dealing with the life history of \textit{R. pumila} or methods for rearing it. Its biology is presumably similar to that of \textit{R. cardinalis}, of which there are many accounts (see Quezada and DeBach 1973). The adult \textit{R. pumila} released by Beardsley on Nomwin were laboratory-reared from adults collected in Koror (Palau) supplemented by adults that had been collected on Cocos Is off the south end of Guam (J. Beardsley pers. comm. 1990). Adult coccinellids are known to be hosts to hymenopterous parasitoids of the widespread genus \textit{Perilitus} (Anderson et al. 1986, Krombein et al. 1979, Shaw 1985) and also to parasitic nematodes and Microsporida (Anderson et al. 1986). These undesirable fellow travellers should not be given a chance of transferring to new countries. \textit{Rodolia} larvae are parasitised in India by the wasp \textit{Homalotylus flaminius} (Subramaniam 1950), for which a watch should be kept.

Adult \textit{R. breviuscula} have a dark undersurface. Females lay an average of 200 scarlet eggs which hatch after about 5 days. The duration of larval life is about 11.3 days, the pupal period about 10.6 days, giving an egg-adult life cycle of 26.9 days. A larva is capable of consuming about 500 eggs of \textit{I. purchasi}, a larger number of this species than claimed for any of the other five native Indian species of \textit{Rodolia} (Subramaniam 1954).

\textit{Cryptochetum} spp.

The dipteran parasitoid \textit{Cryptochetum iceryae} is an important parasitoid of \textit{I. purchasi} and an even more effective biological control agent than \textit{R. cardinalis} in coastal areas of California (Quezada and DeBach 1973). In Chile it, alone, is reported to keep \textit{I. purchasi} under control (Gonzalez and Rojas 1966, Quezada and DeBach 1973). \textit{C. iceryae} produces about 50 offspring per female and has some nine generations a year. It can develop in the early instars of its host, which provide enough nutrients for a single parasitoid, and at all stages up to fully mature females, which can support a maximum of 11 parasitoids. It has excellent powers of dispersal and host location which enables it to exploit its host even at very low host population levels and it has been suggested that it is more efficient than \textit{R. cardinalis} under these conditions (Callagirone and Douc 1989, Quezada and DeBach 1973). The related \textit{C. grandicorne}, which is reported to cause up to 90% mortality to \textit{I. aegyptiaca} in Pakistan and India (Muzaffar 1980, Subramaniam 1954), must therefore be seriously considered as a potential biological control agent. When mealybugs are scarce, a single individual is all that \textit{C. grandicorne} requires for development, whereas \textit{Rodolia} will starve if it does not have access to many.

All of the 200 or so species of the family Cryptochetidae whose biology is known are parasitoids of the scale family Margarodidae and at least some species parasitise more than one host species (Ferrar 1987). \textit{C. grandicorne} has a very widespread distribution, ranging from the Mediterranean (Italy, Algeria) to Asia (Menon 1949), but has not been
recorded from Australia. According to Thorpe (1934), it is readily reared in small cages in the laboratory, in distinction to *C. iceryae*, which requires very large cages for effective rearing (Subramaniam 1949, Thorpe 1930, 1934).

The tiny, metallic-coloured adult *C. grandicorne* mate readily in sunshine, but rarely otherwise. Eggs are inserted into first instar scales after they have settled upon their host plant. Only one larva develops per host. Young larvae absorb nutrients through the cuticle, but later instars consume fat body and eventually other tissues (Ferrar 1987, Menon 1949, Thorpe 1934).

Parasitoids and predators of *Cryptochetum* are known (Mendel and Blumberg 1991, Prasad 1989, Quezada and DeBach 1973, Rosen and Kfir 1983, Subramaniam 1954, Thorpe 1930) and care should be taken to eliminate them during preliminaries to biological control introductions. It is possible that this would increase the efficiency of *Cryptochetum* spp. as biological control agents.

**Comment**

Of the natural enemies present or so far introduced into the oceanic Pacific, only *Rodolia pumila* has proved to be effective enough to maintain *I. aegyptiaca* populations at a sub-economic level, although *R. cardinalis* may have done so when it was temporarily established some years ago in Guam. In spite, therefore, of the growing tendency to avoid choosing predators in favour of more highly selective parasitoids, *R. pumila* would appear to be the species of choice for the biological control of *I. aegyptiaca* in the Pacific. In any case, like the majority of parasitoids, species of *Rodolia* appear to be far more host specific than many other coccinellids. It is strongly recommended, however, if *R. pumila* is to be collected in the field in one country that it should be held in quarantine either in the donor or the receiving country, at least until the next life history stage, before field liberation. Such action would reduce the chances of introducing with it damaging parasitoids or diseases.

It would be most valuable if observations on abundance of both predators and hosts could be made at regular intervals after liberation, particularly in atolls. The information obtained would establish whether, following a reduction of *I. aegyptiaca* to extremely low numbers, self-elimination of the predator occurs. The course of such events in atolls in Kiribati would be of particular relevance, since severe typhoons, postulated on one occasion to contribute to eliminating *R. pumila* from an atoll (Schreiner 1989) rarely occur so close to the equator.

Whatever the sequence of population fluctuations in *Rodolia* spp. proves to be, the fact remains that mealybug numbers on high islands are maintained continuously at non-damaging levels, whereas on atolls there is a boom and bust cycle with predatory beetles disappearing long enough in some locations for mealybug populations to build up to highly damaging populations for several years at a time. It would thus be well worthwhile considering the introduction of parasitoids that could perhaps co-exist with *I. aegyptiaca* at very low densities (Waterhouse 1991a). Possible candidates are the hymenopteran *Tetrastichus* sp., recorded in Pakistan, *Tetrastichus purpureus* from Bangladesh and, especially, the dipteran *Cryptochetum grandicorne* recorded on *I. aegyptiaca* from Pakistan and from India where it produced up to 90% parasitisation. Other promising parasitoids might be revealed by more detailed study in India or further westwards, and thus possibly closer to the presumed centre of origin of *I. aegyptiaca*.

It may be of value at this juncture to summarise some of the attributes of *Rodolia cardinalis* and *Cryptochetum iceryae* which lead to their great effectiveness against the
cottony cushion scale. Of course, the corresponding characteristics of *Rodolia pumila* and *Cryptochetum grandicorne* are, in some respects, somewhat different. The relevant attributes of *R. cardinalis* are (Quezada and DeBach 1973, Thorpe 1930):

1. it is largely independent of climatic conditions;
2. it is restricted to *Icerya* and related scales;
3. each individual destroys several to many prey;
4. it attacks all stages of the scale from egg to adult;
5. it is very active and disperses rapidly, whereas the prey is sedentary;
6. it has about three generations to one of *I. purchasi*;
7. *I. purchasi* cannot easily conceal itself in crevices and is easily preyed upon.

With relation to *C. iceryae* (Quezada and DeBach 1973):

1. this fly is able to locate isolated colonies of *I. purchasi* more readily than *R. cardinalis*;
2. scales parasitised by mature larvae or pupae of the fly are not eaten by *R. cardinalis*;
3. the fly will attack scales on certain plants which *R. cardinalis* avoids;
4. immature stages of the fly apparently tolerate cold temperatures;
5. it requires only one host to complete its development.
The coconut termite is known for certain only from two groups of small atolls in the central Pacific. The hollowing out that workers produce in the trunk of the living coconut palm leads, eventually, to the top snapping off in even mild wind.

It appears that destruction of infested coconut palms and stumps (which are all characteristically surface-marked by the termite) combined with, or perhaps replaced by individual treatment with appropriate entomopathogenic strains of fungi or nematodes, would greatly reduce losses and perhaps even lead to eradication.

There do not appear to be any suitable natural enemies that might be introduced for classical biological control.
Origin

*N. rainbowi* is known only from the central Pacific and presumably evolved there.

Distribution

The coconut termite has been recorded (Figure 4.1) from 5 (and possibly 6) of the 9 atolls comprising Tuvalu (Funafuti, Nanumanga, Nanumea, Nui, Vaitupu and ?Nukulaelae) (Hill 1926, Hopkins 1927, Lenz and Runko 1992). No information is available about the situation on the remaining 3 atolls (Nintao, Nukufetau and Niulakita) but it would be surprising (and most interesting) if *N. rainbowi* was not present, because these atolls are dispersed among infested ones. *N. rainbowi* is present on 4 and suspected on another 2 of the 6 atolls of the northern Cook Is (Manihiki, Nassau, Pukapuka, Suwarrow and ?Penrhyn, ?Rakahanga); and it is also present on Palmerston atoll, the most northerly of the southern Cook Is (Hoy 1978, Kelsey 1945). It is not recorded from the remaining 8 southern Cook Is, only two of which (Manuae, Takutea) are coral atolls. In 1988 *N. rainbowi* was observed in many palms on Pukapuka and Suwarow, but only in one very limited area of Nassau and not in palms elsewhere on the island, suggesting that it may have become established on the latter atoll in comparatively recent times (M. Lenz pers. comm. 1992).

The coconut termite has also been reported from Rotuma, the main (high) island of the 9-island Rotuma group (Fiji) (Maddison 1987, quoting from Swaine (1971)), but the facts that this termite attacks cocoa and citrus as well as coconuts and that the characteristic channels in the bark (see later) have not been recorded, raises doubts about the identity of the species involved and the situation is currently under investigation (M. Lenz pers. comm. 1992).

The genus *Neotermes* is in need of taxonomic revision. It is widely distributed in the south Pacific, with several described and undescribed species, but *N. rainbowi* is the only one known to attack the living wood of the coconut tree (Hopkins 1927, Thomson 1969). The most closely related species are said to be *N. samoanus* from Western Samoa, Solomon Is and Vanuatu; and *N. sarasini* from New Caledonia (Hill 1942). The report of *N. rainbowi* from Western Samoa (Maddison 1987) has proved to be a misidentification of *N. samoanus* (Gay in Lenz 1980).

The coconut termite was reported in Tuvalu in 1896 (Rainbow 1896-97) and in Cook Is about 1904 (Given 1964). Suwarrow (Cook Is) supported a copra estate in the 1920’s and 1930s 'until the island became infested with termites and the export of copra was prohibited' (Stanley 1986) or until 'the ravages of termites made it necessary to prohibit the export of copra' (Douglas and Douglas 1989). It is certainly not at all clear that the atoll was uninfested before the estate was established.

Although it has not previously been reported from the three atolls comprising Tokelau, it was recorded as present but unimportant in the 1992 SPC survey (K. Kirifi, June 1992). The identity of the termite requires confirmation, since blown off tops do not occur, and the termites are normally observed in fallen or dead coconut trunks and the damage done is very minimal (K. Kirifi pers. comm. 1992).

Life Cycle

The *Kalotermidae*, to which *Neotermes rainbowi* belongs, are primitive termites, many of which attack living trees and are termed live-wood termites. Hollows, where wood has been eaten out, are filled with faecal material which is earth-like in appearance and tunnels are constructed of carton-like material.

After a nuptial flight, founding pairs shed their wings and enter suitable wood through tree wounds or cracks; or they may chew a tunnel into soft wood. There mating
Neotermes rainbowi occurs and the female (still accompanied by the male) lays a batch of eggs to produce workers and a small proportion of soldiers. When the first progeny mature they feed and tend the king and queen and, with further egg laying, the colony starts to grow in size. Kalotermitid termites are able to replace injured kings and queens with supplementary reproductives to maintain the colony. Average colony life is probably more than 20 years.

Pest status
Although there is little evidence that the presence of the coconut termite affects the nut yield of mature trees, structural damage to the palm trunks makes them subject to windthrow (Plate 1, Figs 7, 8), even at the low velocities of the steady tradewinds. On the other hand, the yield of young palms is reduced, or they may be destroyed before reaching bearing age (Given 1964). Nuts and fronds, whether fallen or on the tree, are not infested. Although it was reported to Given (1964) by an island inhabitant that \textit{N. rainbowi} attacks all woody trees on Suwarrow (Cook Is) except \textit{Cordia subcordata}, it is highly probable that the termite mainly concerned was a species other than \textit{N. rainbowi}. Twice only in detailed searches on Vaitupu (Tuvalu) was \textit{N. rainbowi} found in other than living coconut palms or stumps. These occasions were when \textit{N. rainbowi} was found some 40cm below ground level in a few palm fence posts and in a woody shrub which had parts of its stems and roots hollowed out. In each case the termites had constructed tunnels into the soil. By contrast, colonies in living palms were never found to have tunnels leading to the soil (Lenz and Runko 1992).

In 1941 a hurricane caused 90% loss of palms on Suwarrow and damage must also have been extensive on Pukapuka since, in 1978, there was 'little evidence of any palms older than approximately 40 years' (Hoy 1978). Around the villages on Pukapuka where the ground is clear of other vegetation relatively few infested palms were found in 1978, whereas further away where ground cover was denser, and especially where pandanus was plentiful, levels of infestation were higher — often somewhat less than one palm in fifteen but occasionally rising to one palm in three (Hoy 1978). However, almost all healthy looking 9 year old palms receiving fertiliser at the time of planting were infested (Lenz 1988).

Attacked palms are readily recognised from the very early stages of infestation, a situation apparently unique amongst termites. At first, a few holes and grooves filled with chips of bark appear on the surface of the trunk. Later, a net-like pattern of grooves and channels is produced to the full depth of the bark (Plate 1, Fig. 9) and these are covered with chips of wood and bark mixed with faecal material. In the northern Cook Is this network commences near the base of the tree, close to where the bark forms a collar over the uppermost roots, and eventually extends upwards one or two metres with the expansion of the termite colony (Lenz 1988). In Tuvalu, the attack on the bark characteristically occurs at levels of 1 to 3 m and extends upwards as the colony expands, so that many square metres of bark become marked (Plate 1, Figs 7, 8) (Hopkins 1927, M. Lenz pers. comm. 1992, Rainbow 1896-97). The function of the channels is unknown but may possibly be related to moisture control, temperature regulation or, perhaps, conditioning of the underlying woody tissues. Whatever its function it is a striking tell-tale sign of the presence of a termite colony (Plate 1, Fig. 9). Very different channels, presumably caused by some other insect are occasionally seen higher up the trunk (M. Lenz pers. comm. 1992). As attack proceeds, large cavities are eaten out of the trunk, often extending to the surface of the palm. Portion of this space is filled with a soft moist honeycomb of faeces and debris. It is at this level that the top snaps off. The stilt roots or branches of nearby \textit{Pandanus} are sometimes hollowed out without invasion of the main trunk (Hoy 1978) and, on Suwarrow, a few eaten out palm roots were observed (Lenz
In Cook Is (Suwarrow, Pukapuka), but not in Tuvalu, it was evident that colonies were able to move from their original infestation through roots and soil to neighbouring palms (Given 1964, Lenz and Runko 1992).

The inhabitants of the atoll islands infested with *N. rainbowi* are very heavily dependent on nut production, not only as a major component of human and domestic animal diet, but as a principal source of income from copra production. The coconut termite is thus of crucial economic and social importance.

In Tuvalu, but not in Cook Is, there is a relatively abundant undescribed species of *Nasutitermes*, which builds dark-coloured galleries on the surface of palm trunks and other vegetation, often reaching the crown. This species is unable to penetrate the hard outer wood of coconut palm, unless this is damaged, such as by the deep access steps cut into palms to facilitate climbing for toddy collection. Tunnels made by *N. rainbowi* may also provide entry. There is no evidence that *Nasutitermes* n. sp. is of economic importance (Lenz and Runko 1992).

**Control Measures**

These have involved the removal and burning of infested palm wood and the use of chemicals. However, chemicals such as arsenic, lindane, dieldrin and phostoxin (Hoy 1978), which are effective if properly applied, are no longer recommended on residue, cost and environmental grounds (Lenz 1988). The destruction of infested material requires considerable physical effort and, unless carried out systematically, probably does little more than depress the steady increase in the number of trees infested. On the other hand, results can be striking if destruction of infested palms is carried out effectively. Thus, clear felling in a palm regeneration program on Vaitupu carried out in the late 1970s and early 1980s reduced infestations to very low levels. Only 4 of 1155 re-planted palms inspected in 1992 were infested with *N. rainbowi* although infestations were common in some other untreated areas. By comparison, 190 had surface infestations by the economically harmless *Nasutitermes* n. sp. (Lenz and Runko 1992). Recently, experiments in Tuvalu involving injection into the termite colonies of specially selected strains of the fungus *Metarhizium anisopliae* or of an entomopathogenic nematode, *Heterorhabditis* sp. have given very promising results (Lenz and Runko 1992).

**Attempts at biological control**

There have been no attempts at classical biological control of *N. rainbowi*, nor apparently any against other termite species.

**Natural enemies**

The most important natural enemies of termites are non-specific invertebrate and vertebrate predators and entomopathogenic fungi. A few ectoparasitic mites and endoparasitic flies (belonging to the families Calliphoridae, Conopidae or Phoridae) are occasionally referred to in the extensive literature on termites; also nematodes, mermithid worms, gregarines, microsporidia, protozoa and fungi (Ernst et al. 1986, Snyder 1956, 1961, 1968). They appear to produce important mortality only in weak colonies, whose decline is thereby accelerated. None of these organisms normally appear to cause sufficiently high or widespread mortality to show promise for classical biological control.

Winged reproductives on their colonising flight are eaten in large numbers not only by ants, dragonflies and other predatory insects, but also by birds, lizards, snakes and frogs. In Australia, workers and soldiers are preyed upon by ants, several marsupials (including the echidna) and many lizards (Watson and Gay 1991). Ants are almost certainly the major predators. Indeed, about one third of the world-wide references
assembled on termite predators by Ernst et al. (1986) and Snyder (1956, 1961, 1968) refer to ants.

Termite colonies often harbour a specialised fauna of arthropods, known as termitophiles. Some of these are predators on eggs and young termites, others are scavengers feeding on nest debris and many provide secretions in return for being fed by worker termites. Nothing is known of termitophiles of *N. rainhowi*, but there is little likelihood that any could be exploited.

The only published report of natural enemies of *N. rainhowi* is the attack on young termites on Suwarrow (Cook Is) by meat ants (Given 1964). However, M. Lenz (pers. comm. 1992) has also observed ant attack on both Cook Is and Tuvalu when tunnels were broken open.

**Comment**

It is probable that many reports of the presence of *N. rainhowi* are due to its being confused with other termite species. On Vaitupu, of the other four termite species present, this would mainly be with *Nasutitermes* n. sp., but also possibly with *Prorhinotermes inopinatus* (Lenz and Runko 1992). Unless the characteristic channels in the bark are evident and unless hollowed out stumps containing termites are present, considerable doubts must be held until there is a positive identification by a termite specialist.

It is postulated that the presence of *N. rainhowi* galleries in the soil in the Cook Is, but their absence in Tuvalu is due to the presence in the latter group of atolls (but not in the former) of an effective subterranean competitor in the form of *Nasutitermes* n. sp.. This species is smaller in size, but more agile, aggressive and numerous and, in encounters, is more likely to be victorious. It prefers to found its colonies at the base of palms and extend its feeding territory by means of subterranean galleries connecting several palm trees. From its position on the outside of the trunk it is able to invade exposed *N. rainhowi* galleries when the top of the palm is blown off. The older such stumps are, the more restricted become the portions occupied by *Neotermes* and the more extensive those by *Nasutitermes* (Lenz and Runko 1992).

There are a number of interesting unresolved problems concerning the origin and distribution of *Neotermes rainhowi*. The answers, if available, might have a direct bearing upon possible long term measures to reduce its abundance. If the currently held view is valid that the Polynesians brought the coconut with them when they migrated into the Pacific some 4000 years or so ago, the voyagers may also have had termites as fellow travellers — either *N. rainhowi* or a species that must have rapidly evolved into it. Alternatively, pairs of as yet unmated reproductives may have been carried to the atolls in storm winds from afar (but from where?). Of course, such pairs would only have been able to initiate colonies once coconut palms had been established. Further, no specific external area of origin for *N. rainhowi* appears credible at the moment. Another difficulty with this means of dispersal is that recorded distances flown by reproductives of most species is no more than a few kilometres (Nutting 1969). Nevertheless 19 alates of *Reticulitermes virginicus* were trapped by aeroplane over Louisiana at altitudes from 20 to 30,000 feet (Glick 1939), so longer distance dispersal cannot be entirely ruled out. It is relevant that nuts and palm fronds are not infested so that, if carried by canoe, colonies must have been in substantial (and thus heavy) portions of coconut trunk. It seems unlikely that termites could survive the long periods of immersion in salt water required for floating logs containing exposed termite colonies to be carried from one atoll to another far away. Of course, it is possible that *N. rainhowi* evolved as a species associated with other woody vegetation, including *Pandanus* roots and stems prior to the introduction
of the coconut into the Pacific, and that it then transferred its main attention to the latter (M. Lenz pers. comm. 1992). Infested *Pandanus* roots would be more readily transported by canoe than colonies in coconut logs and there is some evidence that roots were transported as planting material. The ease with which Kalotermitidae (and presumably *N. rainbowi*) can produce supplementary reproductives from immature termites means that new colonies could be established from a small group of workers and immatures.

Another question is what are the features of the widely dispersed atolls (none of which has ever had a land connection with its neighbours) which permit *N. rainbowi* to survive there, but apparently not on other atolls or on high islands no further away (see Figure 4.1). Is it *N. rainbowi*'s ability to survive (or even require) such factors as salt spray or, more likely, could it be the lack of competition on atolls with their very limited diversity of other animals? However, there appears to be little competition for space once access has been gained to the woody stem of the living palms.

It is considered that the atolls where *N. rainbowi* occurs did not have a native ant fauna (R.W. Taylor pers. comm. 1992), although it is probable that the majority now have a range of exotic tramp species. The distribution of such species is unlikely to be uniform and it is to be expected that the larger, high islands will have more such species than atolls. The only published record for those atolls infested with *N. rainbowi* appears to be for Palmerston (Cook Is), where five species are listed (Taylor 1967) so, at the moment there is no basis for comparison. There is, however, a record from Fakaofo (Tokelau) from 1924 of the presence of 12 species of introduced ants belonging to 9 genera (Wilson and Taylor 1967) and, doubtless, additional species would have arrived since then. However, there is no indication that the higher number there than in Palmerston has any significance in relation to the occurrence of *N. rainbowi*.

If it is postulated that ants could be a major factor in preventing the spread of *N. rainbowi* to additional islands, which species are likely to be involved and could these be introduced to infested islands to reduce, or possibly even eliminate, the coconut termite? The main attack by ants on termites appears to be on reproductives after colonising flights, on workers foraging away from their nests, or when nests or galleries are broken open. If ants were effective in eliminating established colonies, their great abundance and diversity in Australia would surely ensure that termites would have difficulty in surviving, whereas this is certainly not so. It must, thus, be concluded that termites, at least in established colonies, can generally defend themselves effectively against attack by ants.

Even if ants were believed to be effective in destroying termite colonies, in recent years the attitude of those concerned with the conservation of native fauna has firmly against the introduction of non-specific predators, such as ants, that have the capacity to attack, and perhaps eliminate, non-target fauna: most, perhaps all, tramp ants fall into this category. Furthermore, the tramp ants now in the Pacific are, themselves, almost all pests or potential pests. This is because many bite or sting, invade dwellings and foodstuffs and foster outbreaks of aphids and scales for the honeydew they produce. The appearance of additional tramp species is generally regarded as a disaster, for example the unintentional introduction of *Wasmania auropunctata* into New Caledonia (Fabres and Brown 1978).

To pursue this argument further and to investigate whether there could, indeed, be any merit in the introduction of one or more ant species, it would be essential to evaluate the situation on atolls where the species in question either did, or did not, occur and also to include atolls where *N. rainbowi* did, or did not, occur. Very significant logistic problems and costs would be involved.
With the present state of knowledge, there seems little doubt that further development of environmentally safe control methods, such as the use of entomopathogenic fungi or nematodes is the best use of available resources. Also, in view of the tell-tale channels on the trunk surface, the option would appear to exist of eradicating *Neotermes rainbowi* by a well-planned colony treatment operation, supplemented with, or if appropriate replaced by, destruction of infested palms and palm stumps.
Figure 5.1 World distribution of *Clerodendrum chinense*
Clerodendrum chinense

(Osbeck) Mabberley
(formerly C. philippinum)
Honolulu rose

VERBENACEAE
fragrant clerodendrum, Honolulu rose, losa honolulu (Samoa), pelegrina (Tagalog, Philippines), hijantong (Bisaye, Philippines), Sabuka (Igorot, Philippines), pitate mama (Rarotonga), pikake hohono, pikake wauko (Hawaii)

Figure 5.2 Pacific distribution of Clerodendrum chinense

Clerodendrum chinense is native to the region embracing southern China and northern Vietnam.

It has attractive pink to white, fragrant flower heads and is grown in many parts of the world as an ornamental. It has been naturalised for some 150 years in Central and South America, but is regarded there as, at most, a minor weed. It has been naturalised for almost as long in the eastern Pacific, without becoming an important weed but, following its more recent introduction to the southwest Pacific, it is already a serious weed in Western and American Samoa and is rapidly becoming so in Niue and Fiji. In the southwest Pacific it grows vigorously to about 2.5 m in rich moist soils, both in sunshine and in shade, outcompeting and smothering all underlying vegetation.

Only very minor damage is caused to C. chinense in the Pacific by the few, widely polyphagous insects that attack it there. However, several of the many species of leaf-eating beetles which cause significant damage to it in southern China and northern Vietnam are clearly candidate biological control agents. Of these, the chrysomelid Phyllocharis undulata is particularly promising, especially if tests confirm it to be adequately host specific.

Honolulu rose appears to be a promising target for a biological control project in the southwest Pacific.
Identity

The scientific name applied to Honolulu rose has undergone several changes over the years and, even now, there are some problems which require modern taxonomic methods for their resolution. The relevance of this in the present context is that access to relevant information in the literature can only be had if the plant names are known under which the information has been published. Furthermore, host specific natural enemies can best be sought by examining the correct plant species in its area of origin and this can only be established when means for distinguishing it are available.

Honolulu rose was widely referred to as *Clerodendrum fragrans* (Ventenat 1804) until Howard and Powell (1968) pointed out that, under the rules of botanical nomenclature, the specific name *fragrans* was unavailable for *Clerodendrum*. They then selected what they believed to be the first valid name to be applied to this plant, namely *C. philippinum* by Schauer (1847), whose specimens came from the Philippines. Until 1968 many workers treated *C. fragrans* and *C. philippinum* as separate species, and sometimes the latter was cited as a synonym of the former. Plants of *C. philippinum* produce one of three flower types (i) double, without functional anthers or stigma, (ii) double, with many, most, or all flowers fertile or (iii) single, with fertile flowers. Between 1968 and 1989, when Mabberley (1989) introduced another change (see below), (i) was known as *C. philippinum* (Schauer), (ii) as *C. philippinum* var. *subfertile* (Moldenke 1973) and (iii) as *C. philippinum* var. *simplex* Moldenke (1971). Other forms or varieties are *multiplex*, *pleniflorum* (both synonyms of *C. philippinum*) and *corymbosum* (Lam. and Bakk.) Moldenke from Sulawesi. However, even during this period the picture was far from clear because, as Howard and Powell (1968) point out, Schauer's 1847 description was probably not entirely accurate. Their examination of his isotype material in the Gray Herbarium shows that, whereas many of the flowers in the tight inflorescence are single and show stamens and a style, others are semi- to fully double with multiple numbers of petals and staminodes. Of course, whether or not these differences in flower type are significant for biological control will depend upon whether the different forms are differently attacked by natural enemies.

Next, Mabberley (1987) pointed out that the first valid name was actually *Clerodendrum chinense*, a name established in 1757 by Osbeck. However the plant had been placed incorrectly in the bromeliad genus *Cryptanthus*, where it has remained unrecognised for almost 250 years. The type specimen was collected on Dane's island near Whampoa, southern China on 11 September 1751 and described (in Swedish) thus:

(Merrill 1916). 'In the direction of the city there grew a kind of small bush, about as high as gooseberry bushes, with double white flowers. The leaves are as large as those of the rose mallow, cordate, blunt-serrate, the margins with unequal lobes, pubescent on the upper surface, smooth beneath and with at least eight primary nerves, the flowers in terminal racemes."

In the present account the double flowered plant (Plate 2, Fig. 1) will be referred to as *C. chinense* and the single flowered plant as *C. chinense* var. *simplex*. However, in referring to a number of publications where no distinction of floral type has been made the name *C. chinense* has been used.

The genus *Clerodendrum* contains some 500 species of shrubs, trees and vines, most of which are native to the vast region extending from Africa to eastern Asia, with a few only from the Americas. Many are grown for their odd and beautiful flowers. *C. chinense* is an important horticultural plant in many tropical and subtropical areas of the world. It is one of the most commonly cultivated, garden-escaped, and naturalised species of *Clerodendrum*. 
**Origin**

*C. chinense* is native to southern China and probably to nearby countries, although further surveys are required to establish its likely native distribution in Vietnam and, perhaps, in Laos.

**Distribution**

The world distribution of native and naturalised *C. chinense* is given in Table 5.1 and shown in Figure 5.1. The regions enclosed by a solid line in Figure 5.1 include those (i) where it is native and also, in some areas, perhaps, naturalised (southern China to Vietnam and Laos) and (ii) where it is naturalised but not native (elsewhere in Southeast Asia; southern USA to South America; certain Pacific islands). Table 5.2 lists areas where, in 1971, it was growing as an ornamental, but not known to have become naturalised. It is probably now grown rather more widely than indicated, although it may not be present even yet in tropical Africa. Most records are from Moldenke (1971), with the addition of data relating to Western and American Samoa, Malaysia and Singapore. Data from the last two areas are derived from an examination of specimens in their respective herbaria (M.H. Julien pers. comm. 1989 and searches by the author).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table 5.1</th>
<th>World distribution of endemic and naturalised <em>Clerodendrum chinense</em> (Mainly after Moldenke 1971).</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>USA (Florida, Arkansas)</td>
<td>Peru, Brazil, Bolivia, Paraguay, Chile, Argentina, Ascension, <em>Pakistan (East Bengal and West Punjab)</em>, Nepal, India, Burma (Upper Burma), Jamaica, Dominican Republic, Haiti, Puerto Rico, Virgin Islands, Leeward Islands, Windward Islands, Trinidad, Colombia, Venezuela, Guyana, Surinam, French Guiana, Philippines (Jolo, Luzon*, Mindanao, Negros and Sulu), Indonesia (Bakong, Bali, Banka, Bintang, Celebes, Java, Karimata, Singkep, Sumatra), <em>Borneo, Celebes, Java, Lombok, Sumatra</em>, [Celebes (var. <em>corymbosum</em>), Borneo (<em>only</em>), Sarawak, Moluccas (Tornate), Fiji, <em>Hawaii</em>, American Samoa, Western Samoa, Niue, Cook Islands, Society Islands, Tuamotu, Ecuador, <em>Taiwan</em>)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The earliest known specimens of *C. chinense* are those collected in 1751 and 1790 in China (Osbeck 1757, Sweet 1827). It is still to be found in natural habitats in southern China, but less commonly than *C. chinense* var. *simplex*, which is abundant in northern
Vietnam and common in northern Thailand (M.H. Julien pers. comm. 1992). Ventenat (1804) states that his material came from plants in Paris provided by Lahaye which the latter had obtained from Java on La Pérouse’s (1787) expedition. La Pérouse visited the Philippines, but not Java and, since Lahaye was on d’Entrecasteaux’s expedition which did visit Java (in 1792), it is probable that the plants originated there. At all events, \textit{C. chinense} was certainly present in the islands of the region well before the turn of that century. Probably because of its showy flower heads and jasmine-like fragrance at night it was dispersed widely. Walker (1834) records it as a greenhouse plant in England in 1834 and Schauer (1847) its cultivation in China and its occurrence in Central and South America (Guyana, Martinique, Brazil). It was reported as early as 1864 to be naturalised and usually double-flowered in Antigua and from Cuba to Brazil (Griseback 1864) and in Hawaii before 1888 (Hillebrand 1888).

Table 5.2 Countries where, in 1971, \textit{C. chinense} was known to be cultivated (Moldenke 1971).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Antigua</th>
<th>Argentina</th>
<th>Australia</th>
<th>Austria</th>
<th>Bahamas</th>
<th>Belgium</th>
<th>Brazil</th>
<th>California</th>
<th>Canary Islands</th>
<th>China</th>
<th>Colombia</th>
<th>Cuba</th>
<th>Dominica</th>
<th>Ecuador</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Germany</td>
<td>Ghana</td>
<td>Guatemala</td>
<td>Guyana</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Java</td>
<td>Malaysia</td>
<td>Mauritius</td>
<td>Mexico</td>
<td>Netherlands</td>
<td>New York</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Note: \textit{C. chinense} var. simplex is known to be grown in Indochina, Java and Sabah

In the Pacific (Figure 5.2) it is naturalised in Cook Is, Fiji, French Polynesia, Niue, Hawaii and American and Western Samoa (Swarbrick 1989, Whistler 1983). It has not been recorded from Micronesia (Moldenke 1971) and its absence from there is confirmed for Guam (Moore and Krizman 1981, R. Muniappan pers. comm. 1989, Stone 1970) and the Northern Marianas (Fosberg et al. 1975). It is not known in New Caledonia (R. Amice pers. comm. 1989). It is growing as an ornamental in New Zealand (Moldenke 1971) and in Australia (Cairns and Brisbane botanic gardens).

Further details follow of its introduction to, and distribution in, the Pacific:

**COOK IS**

\textit{C. chinense} occurs in both Rarotonga and Aitutaki (P. Samuel pers. comm. 1989). It was first collected in 1929 (Whistler pers. comm. 1989), grows to 0.9 to 1.5 m and is common in lowlands and moist places away from the sea (Wilder 1931), but is not a major pest in agricultural lands (P. Samuel pers. comm. 1989).

**FIJI**

\textit{C. chinense} was first collected as a roadside shrub by Degener and Ordonez during their 1940-1941 expedition (Smith 1942). It was probably introduced as an ornamental but, by 1958, had already become naturalised and common, forming large roadside patches in the wet zones of Viti Levu, Vanua Levu and Taveuni (Parham 1959, 1972). It also occurs now
on Rotuma Is (M. Nagatalevu, pers. comm. 1989). It is spreading steadily along roads in the wetter areas, rapidly becoming a serious weed and is now numbered high amongst the top 10 weeds.

**FRENCH POLYNESIA**

*Clerodendrum chinense* was introduced in 1845 (Pancher in Cuzent 1860, according to Setchell 1926) and now occurs at low altitudes in Tahiti, Moorea and Raiatea; also in Makatea (in the Tuamoto Is) (P. Birnbaum pers. comm. 1989). It was recorded in May 1922 as an extensive thicket of low roadside bushes (Setchell 1926). There is a specimen in the Bishop Museum collected in Tahiti in 1922 (A. Whistler pers. comm. 1989) and another collected in 1927 on Raiatea is listed in the Flora of the Society Is (Papy 1951-1954). A specimen collected in 1927 on Raiatea is in the herbarium of the University of Malaysia.

**HAWAII**

*Clerodendrum chinense* was first collected in Hawaii in 1864-1865. It was listed as present by Drake del Castillo (1886) and by Hillebrand (1888) as a naturalised plant. ‘Along roadsides (Nuuanu) and near abandoned habitations, as on the hill back of Punahou where it covers several acres of ground to the exclusion of everything else’ (Hillebrand 1888). Plants up to about 2 m high now occur in moist places on all islands of the group except Kaho'olawe and Ni'ihiwau and there are numerous references to its presence (e.g. Haselwood and Motter 1966, Kuch and Tongg 1960, Neal 1929, 1965, Pope 1968, St John 1973, Wagner et al. 1990). ‘A clerodendron growing wild on the outskirts of Honolulu as a roadside weed and around deserted homes ... On roadsides, upper Manoa Valley’ (Neal 1929). ‘Naturalised on open, wet, partly shaded, disturbed areas at the edges of mesic and wet forest, taro paddies, or streams’ at elevations from 50 to 670 m’ (Wagner et al. 1990). Although in the above situation it is described as ornamental and usually doubled flowered, like weedy forms elsewhere, *C. chinense* in Hawaii is more generally considered as a minor weed there (Pope 1968), and it is obviously not important enough to have attracted the attention of those involved with biological control problems. Neal (1929) stated that ‘New plants develop from underground stems’, and although Wagner et al. (1990) state that fruit are unknown, seed production was recorded by Haselwood and Motter (1966) and Neal (1929). Thus the low weed status of the plant in Hawaii is not obviously connected with peculiarities in the mode of reproduction, and the situation might well repay study.

**NIUE**

*Clerodendrum chinense* was first collected in 1965, having been introduced from American Samoa some time after 1950 to a village on the southern side of Niue. It is now well established and grows to a height of about 1.5 m on fertile soils (Sykes 1970). Its weed status is steadily increasing (T.G. Mautama pers. comm. 1989) and it is now rated number 5 amongst the island’s worst weeds (A. Hill pers. comm. 1992).

**PAPUA NEW GUINEA**

*Clerodendrum chinense* var. *simplex* is present in Rabaul. It is troublesome when preparing ground for planting cocoa, but is not regarded as an important weed. It is fertile, but also spreads by root suckers (P.D. Turner, pers. comm. 1989).

**AMERICAN SAMOA**

It is not known when *Clerodendrum chinense* was brought to American Samoa but it is rapidly becoming a major weed. Until recently it was common along roadsides and on the borders of plantations. Now, on Tutuila, it has started penetrating into coconut and banana
plantations and into taro (*Alocasia*) fields. On the Manua islands it still occurs only along roadsides (A. Vargo pers. comm. 1989).

**WESTERN SAMOA**
Whistler (1983) records the first collection of *C. chinense* in 1955. It was not mentioned in lists of plants of Western and American Samoa published in the thirties (Christopherson 1935, Lloyd and Aiken 1934). It is present on Upolu and Savaii, but not on Apolima or Manono (A. Peters pers. comm. 1989). Stems are said to have been used as pegs during a survey of some of the roads leading out of Apia, which may account for its widespread distribution along roadsides. Since it is such a conspicuous plant, absence of records earlier than 1955 suggests that, if present much before then, it must have been uncommon or perhaps still only a garden plant. In 1992 it was rated number 2 amongst the country's worst weeds (A. Hill pers. comm. 1992).

**SOUTHEAST ASIA**
It is not known how far the native range of *C. chinense* extends into Southeast Asia, but available information is summarised.

**MALAYSIA**
The earliest specimens in the herbaria in Malaysia and Singapore were collected in 1885 and have double or semi-double flowers. Plants growing in 1989 in the Kuala Lumpur Botanic Gardens have semi-double flowers and are surrounded by young seedlings; hence the flowers are fertile (M.H. Julien pers. comm. 1989).

**INDONESIA**
In addition to the early double-flowered plants referred to by Ventenat (1804), double flowered *C. chinense* was recorded in Java both by Miquel (1856) and Backer and van den Brink (1965). The latter authors record 'Erect shrub, with numerous root-suckers. Up to now found wild only on Idjën plateau; elsewhere occasionally as a garden ornamental ... flowers double ... stamens and ovary absent ... Naturalised in shaded localities near houses'. The form subfertile of *C. chinense* (i.e. double, fertile flowers) was described by Moldenke (1973) from specimens collected in 1935 in marshland and swamp forest in Sarawak.

**PHILIPPINES**
Most authors tend to regard *C. chinense* as a naturalised, rather than a native plant, but not a weed. Thus Quisumbing (1951) writes 'Pelegrina is found in cultivation (although it is occasional also as an escape plant) in and near towns throughout the Philippines. It is a native of southeastern Asia and is now pantropic in cultivation'. Merrill (1912) states that he had seen only the double-flowered form in the Philippines where it is 'frequently cultivated for ornamental purposes' and (1923) 'throughout the Philippines in cultivation, occasional also as an escape in and near towns'. Schauer's (1847) material came from the Philippines and the plant was recorded by Soler (1886) from Luzon. Recently an experienced Philippine weed scientist J.V. Pancho (pers. comm. 1989) expressed doubt that it is native and pointed out that, although widely distributed, it is sporadic in distribution. It is occasionally cultivated as an ornamental shrub, individual plants of which may have either single, semi-double or double flowers.

**VIETNAM**
*C. chinense* has been reported growing in natural habitats only in Quang Ngai Province, central coastal Vietnam (M.H. Julien pers. comm. 1992).
On the other hand, *C. chinense* var. *simplex* is relatively common along roadsides and in forest clearings, where it grows to a height of 1 to 1.5 m. *C. chinense* is recorded in Vietnam in 14th century herbals (T. T. Gian pers. comm. 1989), suggesting that it may be native to the region.

**Characteristics**

*C. chinense* is an erect, soft, perennial shrub, 1 to 3 m in height, bearing fine hairs on stems that are generally sub-rectangular in cross section. Its finely pubescent leaves are simple, opposite and heart-shaped, 6 to 20 cm long, and with an acute tip. Leaf margins tend to be wavy and may be toothed and leaf stalks are about half as long as the leaves. The pale-pink to white flowers are borne in a dense, terminal, hydrangea-like mass 4 to 12 cm in diameter between the leaves at the top of each stem (Plate 2, Fig. 3). The calyx is divided into 5 to 8 elongate lobes, bearing sunken glands. The corolla is fused, funnel-shaped and divided into many lobes. In the weedy form in the Pacific the flowers are double, and there are no stamens or ovaries: hence the plant is sterile. The flowers are delicately scented at night, although scarcely so by day: when crushed the leaves are ill-scented.

*C. chinense* has extra-floral nectaries in four locations (i) on the undersides of the calyx; (ii) on the undersides of the bracts; (iii) at the base of the petioles; and (iv) on the undersides of the leaves. These nectaries attract a large number of ant species, but do not provide ant dwellings or domatia. Some nectar-seeking beetles are also attracted (Jolivet 1983).

**Weed status**

The weed status of *C. chinense* is greatest in Western Samoa, where it is a major weed of roadsides and village gardens (Plate 2, Fig. 1). It also invades pastures, plantations and national parks and dominates all but tall vegetation. Surveys in Upolu recorded *C. chinense* in 7% and 2% of taro fields with an average cover of 22.9% and 6.6% respectively (Kürschner 1986, Sauerborn 1982), figures that are probably not significantly different. It spreads rapidly by root suckers which emerge to form such dense thickets that all underlying plants are smothered (Plate 2, Fig. 2). By 1989 Honolulu rose was growing in dense clumps of up to several hundred metres in diameter. In one such clump, having 11 stems per m² in shaded areas and up to 30 in newly infested open areas, the stem height ranged from 1 to 3 m and the ground cover up to 90%. In open areas the rate of outward clump expansion was 6 to 8 m per annum, but less than 2 m in forested areas. Although about 90% of the ground was under cultivation in a sampling area of 24.5 ha, *C. chinense* covered some 50% of the area, with an average stem height of 1.5 m. Even in areas of intensive cropping, such as in taro or bananas under coconuts, patches of *C. chinense* were present. Indeed, 20 to 40% (and up to 70%) cover occurred in banana plantations and up to 80% ground cover in areas temporarily left uncropped (Josefa 1989). It is little wonder that Honolulu rose is regarded as an extremely serious weed in Western Samoa.

Suckers have been recorded to penetrate under a bitumen road to emerge and form thickets on the other side. The plant thrives best where the soil is fertile and moist and where there is plenty of sunlight. However, it can tolerate shade. In particular, the rich, moist soils of geologically-recent volcanic islands favour it.

Honolulu rose is also regarded as a major weed in American Samoa, Fiji (Plate 2, Fig. 2) and Niue. In Fiji it is naturalised and common, forming large patches on roadsides and waste spaces in the wet zone of Viti Levu, Taveuni and Rotuma (Parham 1959, 1972). It is of less importance in crops, although it is now spreading aggressively (M. Nagatalevu pers. comm. 1989). In Niue its status has changed rapidly over the past five years from relatively unimportant to being one of the major weeds and rated fifth in importance in 1992. It is believed to have been spread by tractor-mounted slashers and by suckers in rubbish thrown into the bush. It is a problem particularly in bush gardens on fertile soils (T.G. Mautama pers. comm. 1989).
By contrast, there are other Pacific countries into which Honolulu rose has been introduced where it is regarded at most as a minor weed. Thus, in Hawaii it has shown relatively few weedy traits and is not common either as a garden plant or in the wild. Neither is it regarded as a weed in Tahiti, where it has been present since 1845 and fairly common, at least since 1922.

In the Botanic Gardens in Cairns (Australia) it has increased from a small plant to a clump many metres across, with plantlets coming up all around the main clump (J. Swarbrick pers. comm. 1989, D. Warmington pers. comm. 1989).

There are some reports from Central America and the Caribbean of *C. chinense* exhibiting a degree of weedingness, for example references to it in Haiti as ‘a large-leaved weed growing in thick stands in coffee glades’ (Dozier 1931).

In the Philippines, it is occasionally grown as an ornamental and in other situations it is not considered as a weed (R.T. Lubigan pers. comm. 1989). *C. chinense* is not known to be abundant or aggressive in what is believed to be its native range in southern China and northern Vietnam.

Except in the oceanic southwest Pacific, the undesirable attributes of *C. chinense* are probably more than counterbalanced by its value as an ornamental plant and the pleasing fragrance of its flowers. It is reported to be used in leis but, in this respect, it is clearly far less popular than the ivory, bell-like flowers of its relative, pikake (*Clerodendrum indicum*).

Many species of *Clerodendrum* contain chemicals that have toxic, antifeedant (Kato et al. 1972) or other pharmacological effects, but extracts that have been tested in various ways for insecticidal properties have displayed only moderate activity. A chemical examination of the aerial parts of *C. chinense* was reported by Nair et al. (1974) and two very rare steroids were identified in the leaves and stems by Akihisa et al. (1988). The antifeeding effects of extracts of six species of *Clerodendrum*, including *C. chinense*, for larvae of the cluster caterpillar *Spodoptera litura* were examined by Hosozawa et al. (1974) who reported the presence of the antifeeding diterpenes, clerodendrin A and B.

In Malaysia, some species of *Clerodendrum* are associated with sorcery or are used medicinally because of their supposed or actual curative powers (Neal 1965). Thus *C. chinense* is reported to be used topically, either in a fomentation for rheumatism andague or, with other substances, for skin diseases (Burkill 1935, Quisumbing 1951). It is still used for medicinal purposes in Vietnam, alone or mixed with other herbs for the control of diseases including dysentery and venereal diseases (Jolivet 1983, T.T. Gian pers. comm. 1989).

In India, partially clarified aqueous extracts of *C. chinense*, applied as a 4% foliar spray every three to four days from seedling stage, reduced infection of *Vigna radiata* and *V. mungo* plants by mung bean yellow mosaic virus by about 60% and enhanced their yield (Verma et al. 1985). Antiviral activity was also shown by aqueous leaf extracts of *C. aculeatum* against tobacco mosaic virus in tobacco (Prasad 1986).

**Control measures**

Control of *C. chinense* is mainly by hand weeding, particularly in crops (taro, vegetables). In Hawaii, it is recommended that the plants be dug out (Pope 1968). No detailed screening of herbicides has been carried out, although 2,4,5-T, or the more expensive Tordon 520 Brushkiller, are suggested as possible herbicides for Western Samoa (Reynolds 1978). More recently a mixture of dicamba and 2,4-D has proved effective (T.V. Bourke pers. comm. 1989). Work carried out in Western Samoa has also shown that metsulfuron methyl ester produces effective control. It has been recommended that the plants be cut and the new growth sprayed (N. Nagatalevu pers. comm. 1989).

When herbicides were applied in Western Samoa to regrowth four weeks after it had been slashed to the ground, glyphosate partially destroyed the foliage, but complete regrowth had occurred by 4 to 6 weeks after application. Treatment with 2,4,5-T resulted in complete kill of foliage, but 5 to 15% of the plants had regrown after 8 weeks (E. Kürschner pers. comm. 1989).
Natural enemies
The only account of the natural enemies of *C. chinense* in its native range appears to be that of Jolivet (1983), who carried out observations in northern Vietnam in the course of studying the association of ants and plants. Most of his records relate to plants growing in clearings or along paths in the forest of Cuc Phuong, some 80 km south of Hanoi. There, some 25 insect species (Table 5.3) and a small snail were observed attacking its leaves or flowers. The species varied according to the season, time of day or night and plant environment, the fauna being richest in forest clearings and poorest near habitations. A number of other insects (but rarely Lepidoptera) sought nectar from the flowers and many ants, but fewer beetles, were attracted to the extra-floral nectaries. Ants and beetles were the main pollinators.

Table 5.3 List of insects associated with *C. chinense* in Vietnam (after Jolivet 1983).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Species</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hemiptera</td>
<td>TINGIDAE&lt;br&gt;undetermined gall-forming species</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleoptera</td>
<td>ELATERIDAE&lt;br&gt;?Agriotes sp.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PHALACRIDAE&lt;br&gt;<em>Phalacrus</em> sp.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>CHRYSOMELIDAE&lt;br&gt;Chrysomelinae&lt;br&gt;<em>Phyllocharis undulata</em>&lt;br&gt;Eumolpinae&lt;br&gt;<em>Cleorina</em> ? dohertyi&lt;br&gt;<em>Colaspoides</em> sp. nr polvipes&lt;br&gt;Cassidinae&lt;br&gt;<em>Aspidomorpha furcata</em>&lt;br&gt;Halticinae&lt;br&gt;<em>Haltica foveicollis</em>&lt;br&gt;<em>Hyphasis</em> sp.&lt;br&gt;<em>Hyphasis</em> sp. nr <em>parvula</em>&lt;br&gt;<em>Luperomorpha</em> sp. prob. <em>albofasciata</em>&lt;br&gt;<em>Nisotra</em> sp.&lt;br&gt;<em>Sabaethe</em> 3 spp.&lt;br&gt;<em>Sabaethe</em> <em>fusca</em>&lt;br&gt;Galerucinae&lt;br&gt;<em>Hoplasomoides egena</em>&lt;br&gt;<em>Monolepta</em> sp.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>CURCULIONIDAE&lt;br&gt;Otiorychichinae&lt;br&gt;Genus and sp. undetermined&lt;br&gt;Baridinae&lt;br&gt;<em>Acythopeus</em> sp.&lt;br&gt;3 genera and species undetermined&lt;br&gt;Alcidodinae&lt;br&gt;<em>Alcidodes</em> sp.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Erirhininae&lt;br&gt;<em>Imerodes</em> sp.&lt;br&gt;Rynchophorinae&lt;br&gt;<em>Aplotes</em> sp.&lt;br&gt;Tanymericinae&lt;br&gt;?<em>Burmoiragus</em> sp.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* It is probable that Jolivet's observations were made on *C. chinense* var. *simplex*
The almost invariable presence of ants on *C. chinense* when it is flowering is considered to deter a range of herbivores that might otherwise attack it. Herbivores that do colonise the plants invariably appear to be those that produce toxic secretions or have other defense mechanisms. Characteristically they are not nectar-seeking and tend to occupy areas away from the nectaries guarded by ants. They occur on both upper and lower surfaces of the leaves and are capable of rapidly skeletonising them. Nectar secretion (and hence visits by ants) ceases during seed formation, leaving the plant more vulnerable during this period, although still protected against some non-habituated herbivores by the foetid smell of the leaves and the various deterrent chemicals present (Jolivet 1983).

Although they occur throughout the year, the gregarious yellow larvae of the chrysomelid beetle *Phyllocharis undulata* are particularly damaging to small and medium clumps of *C. chinense* var. *simplex* in summer. This species is active only by day and seems indifferent to the presence of ants, presumably being protected by its toxic secretions. When mechanically disturbed larvae are reluctant to detach from the leaves (Jolivet 1983). *P. undulata* larvae also occur on the leaves of another verbenaceous plant *Vitex holophylla* (Dang 1981, Medvedev and Dang 1982), but in the field they do not attack the leaves of *Clerodendrum fallax* (P. Jolivet pers. comm. 1989) or *C. paniculatum*, which often grows alongside *C. chinense* in Vietnam (Jolivet 1983). *Phyllocharis undulata* has also been observed feeding actively on the leaves of *C. chinense* at Au Voa, Bavi District, west of Hanoi and in the Vinh Phu province north of Hanoi. At the same time (May) no insect damage was observed to plants at Lang Son on the Vietnam-China border, nor was damage observed, in April to plants in the Chiang Mai region of Thailand (B. Napompeth pers. comm. 1989).

The morphology of the larvae of *P. undulata* was described by Medvedev and Zaitzev (1979) and the larva figured by these authors and by Kalshoven (1981). The yellowish pupae occur in the soil and the adults are strikingly coloured, yellow and blue (Plate 2, Fig. 4). They tend to be very localised and to fly readily when disturbed, but they may also exhibit reflex immobility. The orange-yellow eggs, which are often parasitised in Java (Kalshoven 1981), are laid in clusters on the undersides of the leaves. If *Phyllocharis* is eventually selected as a biological control agent it should be cleared of its gregarine fauna (*Gregarina juengeri*) before release (Théodoridès et al. 1984).

Another damaging chrysomelid, and the only one listed in Table 5.3 that is recorded as attacking the flowers, is *Hoplasomoides egena*, whose adults fly off rapidly when disturbed. This beetle suffers high mortality in autumn from attack by *Beauveria bassiana*, but this fungus is inactive during summer. In Asia, members of the genera *Hoplasomoides* and *Hoplasoma* appear, to be restricted to the verbenaceous genera *Clerodendrum*, *Premna* and *Vitex* (Jolivet 1983).

Characteristically, when disturbed, adults of the halticine chrysomelids immediately jump into the air and take flight (Table 5.3). They are presumably responsible for the numerous small holes in the leaves of many herbarium specimens of *C. chinense* from Southeast Asia, but no details are provided by Jolivet (1983) of the damage that they cause in Vietnam. Most are recorded as disappearing in summer and the elaterid *Agriotes* sp. is also absent in summer. Two of the species listed (*Haltica foveicollis* and *Nisotra* sp.) may only be casual visitors to the plant. The latter elaterid beetle probably feeds only on nectar.

The presence of unidentified mealybugs amongst the flower bracts is mentioned by Jolivet (1983). These have a mutualistic association with ants, which eagerly seek their secretions.

Large galls, probably caused by tingid bugs, are common on stems, petioles, leaves and particularly on the leaf veins of *Clerodendrum* spp., and of *C. chinense* in particular. Only one lepidopterous larva, yellow and urticating, was observed by Jolivet (1983) It occurred on a plant without attendant ants. T.T. Gian (pers. comm 1989) has recently observed a lepidopterous larva (*Tortricidae*) feeding on the leaves. Small mites, which
were abundant around the petiole nectaries appeared to ingest nectar and seemed to cause no damage (Jolivet 1983).

In contrast with the situation in Vietnam, there are few records of attack elsewhere on *C. chinense* (Table 5.4). The issid bug *Colpoptera clerodendri* was described by Dozier (1931) from specimens collected from *C. chinense* in Haiti. However, as this host is not native there, the bug must have transferred to it from some other plant. Its host range merits investigation since it is possible that it will not attack any plants of economic importance. Of the other species listed, the widespread aphid *Myzus ornatus* is a polyphagous pest of an extensive range of economic plants and the widely polyphagous *Phenacoccus parvus* is probably a relatively recent introduction from tropical America to the Pacific. There it is known from Fiji, New Caledonia, Vanuatu and Western Samoa. It was collected from *C. chinense* in Savaii (Western Samoa) in 1987 (Williams and Watson 1988b), and was observed to be causing damage a decade earlier in Upolu (P.A. Maddison pers. comm. 1989). The growing tips are most heavily infested during the dry season (A. Peters pers. comm. 1989). *P. parvus* is recorded as attacking the weeds *Lantana camara*, *Mikania micrantha* and *Sida acuta* in Vanuatu (Cock 1984) and it has recently been taken on *C. chinense* in Cairns, Queensland (D. Warmington pers. comm. 1980).

*Planococcus pacificus* is the most widespread mealybug in the Pacific. It is widely polyphagous and a serious pest of coffee in Papua New Guinea. It was collected on flower heads of *C. chinense* near Suva, but did not appear to be damaging them (author's observations 1989).

The soft brown scale *Coccus hesperidum*, reported from *C. chinense* in Florida, is one of the most polyphagous species in the Coccidiae (Gill et al. 1977) and is cosmopolitan in glasshouses and on plants in tropical and subtropical regions. It is an important pest of citrus in many parts of the world (Talhouk 1975), if not brought under biological control, as it has now been in a number of areas (Clausen 1978a).

In the São Paulo botanic gardens, the leaves of *C. chinense* were heavily damaged in the last months of 1981 and the beginning of 1982 by the native chrysomelid beetle *Omophoita sexnotata* (Bergmann et al. 1983). No subsequent observations have been made by these authors either on the insect or its host (J.A. Winder pers. comm. 1989), but *O. sexnotata* would be of no value as a biological control agent since it is reported to attack ears of wheat in Rio Grande do Sul. Several other species of *Omophoita* are also well known pests in Brazil.

*Diaphania hyalinata* larvae, which were recorded on the leaves of *C. chinense* in Bermuda, also damage the leaves and fruit of cucurbits there (Ogilvie 1926).

Table 5.4 Natural enemies of *Clerodendrum chinense* in places other than Vietnam.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Natural enemy</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hemiptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pentatomidae</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Nezara viridula</em></td>
<td>Western Samoa</td>
<td>Isoefa 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Issidae</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Colpoptera clerodendri</em></td>
<td>Haiti</td>
<td>Dozier 1931</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aphididae</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Myzus ornatus</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raychaudhuri 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Unidentified aphid</td>
<td>American Samoa</td>
<td>A. Vargo pers. comm. 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diaspididae</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Chrysomphalus dictyspermi</em></td>
<td>Italy</td>
<td>Savastano 1930</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Hemiberlesia (=Aspidiotus)</em></td>
<td>Italy</td>
<td>Costantino 1950</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>lataniae</em></td>
<td>Cuba</td>
<td>Houser 1918</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued on next page)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Natural enemy</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>PSEUDOCOCIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Phenacoccus parvus</em></td>
<td>Western Samoa</td>
<td>Isofea 1989,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Williams &amp; Watson 1988b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Warmington pers. comm. 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>author's observations 1990</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Thailand</td>
<td>author's observations 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Planococcus pacificus</em></td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>author's observations 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Western Samoa</td>
<td>T.V. Bourke pers. comm. 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>author's observations</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>COCCIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Gascardia cirripediformis</em></td>
<td>Cuba</td>
<td>Ballou 1926</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Gascardia floridensis</em></td>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>Waterston 1941</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Coccus hesperidum</em></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Hamon &amp; Williams 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Protopulvinaria pyriformis</em></td>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>Waterston 1941</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pulvinaria sp. (? urbicola)</em></td>
<td>Cuba</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm. *</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Saissetia hemisphaerica</em></td>
<td>Cuba</td>
<td>Ballou 1926</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Unidentified</em></td>
<td>Sumatra</td>
<td>Van Leedwen-Reignvaan 1941</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>COREIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pternistria bispina</em></td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>author's observation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Coleoptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CHRYSOMELIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Omophota sexnotata</em></td>
<td>São Paulo</td>
<td>Bergmann et al. 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(Brazil)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>LEPIDOPTERA</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>PYRALIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Crocidolomia pavonana</em></td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>Lever 1945</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>SPHINGIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Acherontia styx</em></td>
<td>Thailand</td>
<td>Pholboon 1965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diaphania (Margaronia) hyalinata</em></td>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>Ogilvie 1926</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>? Family</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Minor larval damage to leaves)</td>
<td>Western Samoa</td>
<td>author's observations, Iosefa 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>author's observations</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>LYCAENIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Hypolycaena erylus himavantus</em></td>
<td>Thailand</td>
<td>Pholboon 1965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fruhstorfer</td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>D. Warmington pers. comm. 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Hypolycaena phorbas</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>NOCTUIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Spodoptera litura</em></td>
<td>American Samoa</td>
<td>A. Vargo pers. comm. 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Fungi</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aecidium clerodendri</em></td>
<td>Philippines</td>
<td>Baker 1914,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Sydow &amp; Sydow 1913a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Cercospora volkameriae</em></td>
<td>Brazil</td>
<td>Sped 1908 in Singh 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Endophyllum superfisciae</em></td>
<td>Thailand</td>
<td>Black &amp; Jonglaekha 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pleospora infectoria</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Reddy &amp; Rao 1975</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Information supplied by D.R. Miller, Systematic Entomology Laboratory, USDA, from a card index at Beltsville, Md.
The cabbage centre grub *Crocidolomia pavonana*, a serious world-wide pest, has been recorded attacking *C. chinense* in Fiji (Lever 1945).

Defoliation of *C. chinense* in Cairns by larvae of the lycaenid butterfly *Hypolycaena phorbas*, attended by the green tree ant *Oecophylla smaragdina* has been reported (D. Warington pers. comm. 1989). Larvae of this butterfly occur also on a number of other plants (including *Cupaniopsis anacardioides* (Sapindaceae), *Faradaya splendida*, *Clerodendrum floribundum* (Verbenaceae), *Planchonia caryea* (Lecythidaceae), *Flagellaria indica* (Flagellariaceae), *Acmena* (Myrtaceae) and mistletoe (Loranthaceae) (Common and Waterhouse 1981).

In American Samoa the armyworm *Spodoptera litura* was reported to attack both taro and bordering growth of *C. chinense* (A. Vargo pers. comm. 1989). In 1988 minor damage to leaves of *C. chinense*, which appeared to be caused by a lepidopterous larva was observed by the author near Apia in October and a lepidopterous larva was observed attacking leaves in Fiji in July. The convolvulus moth *Agrius convolvuli* was reported in India to lay eggs on *C. chinense*, although no feeding damage was observed (Nagarkatti 1973). This record is paralleled by reports that newly-emerged adults of the tentredinid turnip pest *Athalia lugens infumata* in Japan move to the leaves of *Clerodendrum trichotomum* to mate (Kitano 1988), but not to use it as a host.

Leaves of many of the specimens of *C. chinense* (as *C. fragrans*) from Malaysia or Singapore in the Singapore herbarium have holes reminiscent of flea beetle attack and photographs of plants growing in the Kuala Lumpur Botanic Gardens in April show similar damage. In the Philippines small to large (1 cm diameter) holes occur in the leaves, which might be flea beetle damage (J.V. Pancho pers. comm. 1989).

The rust *Endophyllum superficiale* occurs on *C. chinense* in Thailand and Vietnam and attacks a number of other *Clerodendrum* species in Southeast Asia and one in Australia. A *Cercospora*-like fungus was also present in Vietnam (Black and Jonglaekha 1989, M. Julien pers. comm. 1991). A fungus (the *alternaria* state of *Plesosporia infectoria*) was found on the leaves of *C. chinense* in Andra Pradesh (India), severe attack causing the drying of both young and mature leaves and occasional defoliation of plants (Reddy and Rao 1975). Also, there is an early record (February 1911) of the rust *Aecidium clerodendri* attacking *C. philippinum* in the Philippines (Laguna, Luzon) (Sydow and Sydow 1913a). This rust was also recorded attacking *Clerodendrum calamatosum*, *C. intermedium* and an unidentified species of *Clerodendrum* in January and September (Baker 1914, Sydow and Sydow 1913a,b).

In view of the extremely wide distribution of *C. chinense* and its common use as an ornamental plant, the paucity of records of natural enemies elsewhere than in Vietnam might be interpreted to mean that it is seldom attacked or, if it is, that the damage is so minor as not to arouse concern. This view, however, finds little support from Table 5.5, which lists organisms attacking other species of *Clerodendrum*, records of which have been encountered during the search for information on *C. chinense*. It would be quite exceptional if a genus with some 500 species did not have at least a similar number of associated, relatively host specific insects. A more plausible inference, therefore, is that the insects attacking this genus have been very poorly studied. Of the insects listed in Table 5.5, most are polyphagous, generally widely so, as well as widespread, and either pest or potential pest species. Hence most could not be considered as potential biological control agents, and only the three aphids *Aphis clerodendri*, *Nasonovia rostrata* and *Prociphilus clerodendri* seem to offer any prospects of being useful but, to offset this, it is quite possible that some of the fungi (in particular *Aecidium clerodendri*), may have a useful degree of specificity. *Aphis clerodendri* belongs to the *A. gossypii* group which is in taxonomic disarray. Similar aphids have been collected from *Clerodendrum* spp. in Australia, Philippines and India (V.F. Eastop pers. comm. 1989).
### Table S.5 Natural enemies of species of *Clerodendrum* other than *C. chinense*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Natural enemy</th>
<th>Host</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hemiptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>RICANIIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Ricania fenestrata</em></td>
<td><em>C. inerme</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Swaminathan &amp; Ananthakrishnan 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>APHIDIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis clerodendri</em></td>
<td><em>C. trichotomum</em></td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Higuchi &amp; Miyazaki 1969, Inaiuzumi 1970, Matsumura 1917, Paik 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>A. clerodendri var. amamiana</em></td>
<td><em>C. trichotomum</em> var. <em>yakushimensis</em></td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Higuchi &amp; Miyazaki 1969</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>A. gossypii</em></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>Zimmerman 1948</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> spp.</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raychaudhuri 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. ineana</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raychaudhuri 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raychaudhuri 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. intermedium</em></td>
<td>Philippines</td>
<td>Calilung 1969</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. japonicum</em></td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Higuchi &amp; Miyazaki 1969</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. serratum</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raychaudhuri 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. thomsonae</em></td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Patch 1938</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. trichotomum</em></td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Higuchi &amp; Miyazaki 1969, Patch 1938</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>A. nasturtii</em></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> spp.</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raychaudhuri 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>A. spiraecola (= <em>A. citricola</em>)</em></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raychaudhuri 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>AULACORTHUM MAGNOLIAE</strong></td>
<td><em>C. trichotomum</em></td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Higuchi &amp; Miyazaki 1969</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>BRACHYCAUDUS HELICHRYSI</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> spp.</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raychaudhiri 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MOLLIRICHIOSIPHON NANDII</strong></td>
<td><em>C. serratum</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raychaudhiri 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MYZUS ORNATUS</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> spp.</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raychaudhiri 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. myricoides</em></td>
<td>California</td>
<td>Leonard et al. 1971</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. japonicum</em></td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Miyazaki 1971</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. myricoides</em></td>
<td>California</td>
<td>Leonard et al. 1970</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. speciosissimum</em></td>
<td>California</td>
<td>Leonard et al. 1970</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>David &amp; Hameed 1974, Raychaudhuri 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>NASONOVIA ROSTRATA</strong></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>Korea</td>
<td>Okamoto &amp; Takahashi 1927</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>PROCIPIHLAS CLERODENDRI</strong></td>
<td><em>C. trichotomum</em></td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Paik 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>SINOMEGOURA CITRICOLA</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> spp.</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raychaudhuri 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ALEYRODIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aleurocanthus alternans</em></td>
<td><em>C. polypecephalum</em></td>
<td>West Africa</td>
<td>Cohic 1969</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>A. descarpentiessi</em></td>
<td><em>C. polypecephalum</em></td>
<td>West Africa</td>
<td>Cohic 1969</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aleurolobus juilleni</em></td>
<td><em>C. thomsonae</em></td>
<td>Congo</td>
<td>Cohic 1968b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aleuroplatus trilissiae</em></td>
<td><em>C. speciosissimum</em></td>
<td>West Africa</td>
<td>Cohic 1968a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aleurotuberculatus uraianus</em></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Taiwan</td>
<td>Takahashi 1932</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Bemisia tabaci</em></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Misra &amp; Singh 1929</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued on next page)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Natural enemy</th>
<th>Host</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pealius rubi</td>
<td><em>C. splendens</em></td>
<td>Malaysia</td>
<td>Mound &amp; Halsey 1978</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tetraleurodes russellae</td>
<td><em>C. villosum</em></td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Corbett 1935</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. trichotomum</em></td>
<td></td>
<td>Takahashi 1955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ORTHEZIIDAE</td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td></td>
<td>Cohic 1968b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orthezia insignis</td>
<td><em>C. inerme</em></td>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td>Hall 1922</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. macrosiphon</em></td>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td>Ezzat 1956</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. milkii</em></td>
<td>Ceylon</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. minahassae</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. penduliflorum</em></td>
<td>Singapore</td>
<td>Morrison 1921</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. thomsonae</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ASTEROLECANIIDAE</td>
<td><em>Asterolecanium</em> pustulans</td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>El Salvador</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COCCIDAE</td>
<td><em>Coccus acuminatus</em></td>
<td>Jamica</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. capparidis</em></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Hamon &amp; Williams 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. cirripediformis</em></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Hamon &amp; Williams 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. hesperidum</em></td>
<td>S. Africa</td>
<td>Munro &amp; Fouche 1936</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. forgesii</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>Pirone et al. 1960</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. fretidum</em></td>
<td>USSR</td>
<td>Saakian-Baranova 1964</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>USSR</td>
<td>Saakian-Baranova 1964</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Gascardia</em> sp.</td>
<td>Uganda</td>
<td>Arkhaengel'skaya 1929</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. thomsonae</em></td>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>Porschsenius 1957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. fallax</em></td>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td>Compere 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>G. africanaus</em></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Hall 1923</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>G. cirripediformis</em></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Hamon &amp; Williams 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>G. destructor</em></td>
<td>Uganda</td>
<td>Gurney 1936</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>G. floridensis</em></td>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td>Hall 1923</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. corallita</em></td>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>Ogilvie 1928</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Prototopulvinaria</em> pyriformis</td>
<td></td>
<td>Ogilvie 1928</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Pulvinaria</em> sp.</td>
<td>Cuba</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. fallax</em></td>
<td>Panama</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. siphonanthus</em></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Pirone et al. 1960</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>P. psidii</em></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Hamon &amp; Williams 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>P. urbicola</em></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Hamon &amp; Williams 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Saissetia</em> coffeae</td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>S. hemisphaerica</em></td>
<td>Brazil</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>S. miranda</em></td>
<td>Panama</td>
<td>Mead 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>S. oleae</em></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Hamon &amp; Williams 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. speciosissum</em></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Hamon &amp; Williams 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. kaempferi</em></td>
<td>Cuba</td>
<td>Ballou 1926</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. nutans</em></td>
<td>Zanzibar Is.</td>
<td>Way 1954</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. glabrum</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PSEUDOCOCCIDAE</td>
<td><em>Dysmicoccus neobrevipes</em></td>
<td>W. Samoa</td>
<td>Williams &amp; Watson 1988b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued on next page)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Natural enemy</th>
<th>Host</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Ferrisia virgata</strong></td>
<td><em>C. paniculatum</em></td>
<td>Siera Leone</td>
<td>Hargreaves 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Nipaecoccus viridis</strong></td>
<td><em>C. capsularis</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Ali 1961, Ghosh &amp; Ghosh 1985</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(= <em>N. vastator</em>)</td>
<td><em>C. fallax</em></td>
<td>Cuba</td>
<td>Ballou 1926</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. heterophyllum</em></td>
<td>Madagascar*</td>
<td>Mamet 1951</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>* This pseudococcid was wrongly identified as <em>Pseudococcus filamentosus</em> (D.J. Williams pers. comm. 1989).</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Phenacoccus hirsutus</strong></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Ghosh &amp; Ghosh 1985</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. olitorius</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Ghosh &amp; Ghosh 1985</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Planococcus citri</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td>Hall 1923</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>S. Australia</td>
<td>Williams 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. fallax</em></td>
<td>Fiji</td>
<td>Veitch &amp; Greenwood 1924</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. formicarum</em></td>
<td>Gold Coast</td>
<td>Strickland 1947</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>P. pacificus</strong></td>
<td><em>C. paniculatum</em></td>
<td>Mauritias</td>
<td>Mamet 1948</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. disparifolium</em></td>
<td>W. Samoa</td>
<td>Williams &amp; Watson 1988b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. fallax</em></td>
<td>W. Samoa</td>
<td>Williams &amp; Watson 1988b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. paniculatum</em></td>
<td>W. Samoa</td>
<td>Williams &amp; Watson 1988b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Pseudococcus filamentosus</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>Fullaway 1925</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. heterophyllum</em></td>
<td>Malaysia</td>
<td>Takahashi 1950</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. squamatum</em></td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>Fullaway 1923</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Pseudococcus longispinus</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>USSR</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>P. njalensis</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Gold Coast</td>
<td>Hall 1945</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Unidentified</td>
<td><em>C. balfouri</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>Ehrhorn 1926</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### DIASPIDIDAE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Natural enemy</th>
<th>Host</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Abgrallaspis cyanophylli</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>W. Samoa</td>
<td>Williams &amp; Watson 1988a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Aonidiella aurantii</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>S. Africa</td>
<td>Munro &amp; Fouche 1936</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>A. orientalis</strong></td>
<td><em>C. phlomoides</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Rahman &amp; Ansari 1941</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>A. pectinatus</strong></td>
<td><em>C. inerme</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Rahman &amp; Ansari 1941</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Aspidiotus cyanophylli</strong></td>
<td><em>C. siphonanthus</em></td>
<td>Panama</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>A. excisus</strong></td>
<td><em>C. inerme</em></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Dekle 1976</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Takahashi 1929, 1936a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Chrysomphalus dictyospermi</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Italy</td>
<td>Savastano 1930</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. glaucum</em></td>
<td>Italy</td>
<td>Savastano 1930</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. roseum</em></td>
<td>Italy</td>
<td>Savastano 1930</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. splendens</em></td>
<td>Italy</td>
<td>Savastano 1930</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. squamatum</em></td>
<td>Italy</td>
<td>Savastano 1930</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hemiberlesia lataniae</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Dekle 1976</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hemichionaspis sp.</strong></td>
<td><em>C. glaucum</em></td>
<td>Java</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Pinnaspis minor</strong></td>
<td><em>C. thomsonae</em></td>
<td>Malaysia</td>
<td>D.R. Miller pers. comm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Pseudischiaspis alienus</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Cuba</td>
<td>Houser 1918</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### MARGARODIDAE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Natural enemy</th>
<th>Host</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Drosicha mangiferae</strong></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Tandon et al. 1978,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Srivastava &amp; Fasih 1988</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Icerya seychellarum</strong></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Solomon Is</td>
<td>Williams &amp; Watson 1990</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued on next page)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Natural enemy</th>
<th>Host</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>TINGIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Paracopium</em> sp.</td>
<td><em>C. buchholzii</em></td>
<td></td>
<td>Jaeger 1976</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Paracopium</em> sp.</td>
<td><em>C. inerme</em></td>
<td></td>
<td>Murphy 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>P. cingalense</em></td>
<td><em>C. phlomidis</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Mani 1973</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>P. (= Euryccra) glabricorne</em></td>
<td><em>C. schwarzinfurthii</em></td>
<td>Tanzania</td>
<td>Verdcourt 1962</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>P. hamadryas</em></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Belgian</td>
<td>Drake 1925</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Congo</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. buchholzii</em></td>
<td>Gold Coast</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ALYDIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Leptocoris varicornis</em></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Sen 1955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Thysanoptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>THRIPIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Frankliniella</em> brevicaulis*</td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Central America</td>
<td>USDA 1978</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>F. formosae tricolor</em></td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Moulton 1928</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Coleoptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MELOIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Epicuata</em> hirticornis*</td>
<td><em>C. cyrtophyllum</em></td>
<td>Taiwan</td>
<td>Maki 1920</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. paniculatum</em></td>
<td>Taiwan</td>
<td>Maki 1920</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CERAMBYCIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Dihammus cervinus</em></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Burma,</td>
<td>Browne 1968</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>India, Pakistan</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Smermus</em> fisheri</td>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>India</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>Burma</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CHRYSOIDELDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Alagoasa</em> bicolor*</td>
<td><em>C. aculeatum</em></td>
<td>Puerto Rico</td>
<td>Virkki &amp; Zambrana 1980</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Argopistes</em> hargreaveesi*</td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Kenya</td>
<td>Jolivet 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Cladocera</em> uniformis*</td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Kenya</td>
<td>Jolivet 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Luperomorpha</em> vittata*</td>
<td><em>C. inerme</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Lingappa &amp; Siddappaji 1978</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Oidosoma</em> africanum*</td>
<td><em>C. capitatum</em></td>
<td>Kenya</td>
<td>Jolivet 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Omphoidea</em> cyaniennis*</td>
<td><em>C. aculeatum</em></td>
<td>Puerto Rico</td>
<td>Virkki 1980, 1982</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>C. speciosissimum</em></td>
<td></td>
<td>Cuba</td>
<td>Virkki 1980</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>P. cyanicorinis</em></td>
<td><em>C. floribundum</em></td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>D.P. Sands pers. comm. 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>P. gracilis</em></td>
<td><em>C. floribundum</em></td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>D.P. Sands pers. comm. 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pseudomela murrayi</em></td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> spp.</td>
<td>Kenya</td>
<td>Jolivet 1983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Unspecified Halticine</em></td>
<td><em>C. aculeatum</em></td>
<td>Puerto Rico</td>
<td>Virkki 1980</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>SCOLYTIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Xylomelanderus</em> compactus* (= Xyleborus morstatti)</td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Anon. 1941</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Diptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>AGROMYZIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Unidentified sp.</td>
<td><em>Clerodendrum</em> sp.</td>
<td>Uganda</td>
<td>Spencer 1973</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Lepidoptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>HEPIALIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Sahyadrassus</em> malabaricus*</td>
<td><em>C. viscosum</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Nair 1982</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued on next page)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Natural enemy</th>
<th>Host</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>COSSIDAE</td>
<td><em>Xyleutes ceramicus</em></td>
<td>Burma</td>
<td>Atkinson 1929-31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>Burma</td>
<td>Garthwaite 1940</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. infortunatum</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Arora 1971</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PSYCHIDAE</td>
<td><em>Zeuzera coffeae</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Arora 1971</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Clania cramerii</em></td>
<td>Pakistan</td>
<td>Hamid 1966</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PYRALIDAE</td>
<td><em>Salebria iriditis</em></td>
<td>Java</td>
<td>Meyrick 1933</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LYCAENIDAE</td>
<td><em>Anthene lycaenoides</em></td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>Common &amp; Waterhouse 1981</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Euchrysops cnehus</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>T. Singh 1982</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Hypolycaena phorbas</em></td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>Common &amp; Waterhouse 1981</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Pseudodipsas eone</em></td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>Moss 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Common &amp; Waterhouse 1981</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SPHINGIDAE</td>
<td><em>Acherontia styx</em></td>
<td>Indonesia</td>
<td>Kalshoven 1981</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. indicum</em></td>
<td>Saudi Arabia</td>
<td>Pittaway 1987</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ARCTIDAE</td>
<td><em>Diacrisia rhodophila</em></td>
<td>Taiwan</td>
<td>Sonan 1940</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>var. <em>rhodophilodes</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Spilosoma (= Diacrisia)</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Yadava &amp; Singh 1977</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>obliqua</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. inerme</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Singh &amp; Gangrade 1977</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. siphonanthus</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Hussain et al. 1987</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hymenoptera</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TENTHREDINIDAE</td>
<td><em>Athalia rosae ruficornis</em></td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Nishida &amp; Fukami 1990, Nishida et al. 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acari</td>
<td><em>Brevipalpus phoenicis</em></td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>Garett &amp; Haramoto 1967</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>C. siphonanthus</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Lal 1979, Lal &amp; Mukharji 1979</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Eotetranychus uncatus</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Lal &amp; Mukharji 1979</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Tetranychus kanzawai</em></td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Takafuli &amp; Ishii 1989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Tetranychus macfarlanei</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Pande &amp; Yadava 1976</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nematoda</td>
<td><em>Heterodera marioni</em></td>
<td>Clerodendrum</td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Meloidogyne sp.</em></td>
<td>Clerodendrum</td>
<td>Westcott 1971</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>M. incognita</em></td>
<td>Clerodendrum</td>
<td>Pirone et al. 1960</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued on next page)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Natural enemy</th>
<th>Host</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Plant Kingdom</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CONVOLVULACEAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cuscuta reflexa</td>
<td>Clerodendrum sp.</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Gupta et al. 1979</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Indonesia</td>
<td>van Oostroom &amp; Hoogland 1953</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. inerme</td>
<td>India</td>
<td></td>
<td>Shieriar 1951</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Fungi</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aecidium clerodendri</td>
<td>Clerodendrum sp.</td>
<td>Java</td>
<td>Baker 1914, Hennings 1892, 1908</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>C. calamatosum</td>
<td>Sydow &amp; Sydow 1913a,b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>C. intermedium</td>
<td>Sydow &amp; Sydow 1910, 1913a,b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A. entebbeensis</td>
<td>Clerodendrum sp.</td>
<td>Uganda</td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A. clerodendricola</td>
<td>Clerodendrum sp.</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alternaria citri</td>
<td>C. siphonanthus</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>I.D. Singh 1982</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ascochyta infortunata</td>
<td>C. infortunatum</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Ramakrishnan 1951</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Balladynastrum clerodendri</td>
<td>Clerodendrum sp.</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Capnodium sp.</td>
<td>C. inerme</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Vora &amp; George 1978</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cercospora sp.</td>
<td>C. indicum</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>Sobers &amp; Martinez 1964</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. speciosum</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>Sobers &amp; Martinez 1964</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. thonsoniae</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>Sobers &amp; Martinez 1964</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. apiif clerodendri</td>
<td>Clerodendrum spp</td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Sobers &amp; Martinez 1966</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Westcott 1971</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. bakeri</td>
<td>C. intermedium</td>
<td>Philippines</td>
<td>Baker 1914</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. kashotoensis</td>
<td>C. inerme</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raganathan et al. 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. volkameriae</td>
<td>C. infortunatum</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Srivastava et al. 1980</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. siphonatum</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Singh 1972</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cercoseptoria clerodendri</td>
<td>Clerodendrum sp.</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cerotelium daedaloides</td>
<td>Clerodendrum sp.</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Singh 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Clerodendrum sp.</td>
<td>Uganda</td>
<td>Cummins 1943</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. buchholzii</td>
<td>Uganda</td>
<td>Cummins 1943</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Colletotrichum crassipes</td>
<td>C. infortunatum</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Mohanan &amp; Kaveriappa 1986</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. gloeosporioides</td>
<td>C. infortunatum</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Karunakaran et al. 1980</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coniothyrium clerodendri</td>
<td>C. infortunatum</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Curvularia eragrostidis</td>
<td>C. infortunatum</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Raju &amp; Leelavathy 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cylindrocladium quinqueseptatum</td>
<td>Clerodendrum sp.</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Sulochana et al. 1982</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Didymaria clerodendri</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dimeria citricola</td>
<td>C. indicum</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fusarium concolor</td>
<td>(C. buchholzii)</td>
<td>(but not on C. infortunatum)</td>
<td>Pandey &amp; Pant 1980</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ganoderma lucidum</td>
<td>C. inerme</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Rajak &amp; Rai 1984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Halposporella clerodendri</td>
<td>C. buchholzii</td>
<td>Florida</td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kutikalesa pironii (Nectriella pironii)</td>
<td>C. inerme</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Aflieri et al. 1979</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meliola clerodendri</td>
<td>Clerodendrum sp.</td>
<td>Uganda</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Congo</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. buchholzii</td>
<td>Sierra Leone</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Gold Coast</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued on next page)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Natural enemy</th>
<th>Host</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. capitatum</td>
<td>Gold Coast</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. paniculatum</td>
<td>Sierra Leone</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. scandens</td>
<td>Sierra Leone</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>M. clerodendricola</td>
<td>Clerodendrum sp.</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. canescens</td>
<td>Tonkin</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. capitatum</td>
<td>Gold Coast</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. cumingianum</td>
<td>Philippines</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. formicarium</td>
<td>Cameroon</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. glabrum</td>
<td>Sierra Leone</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. intermedium</td>
<td>Philippines</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. minahassae</td>
<td>Philippines</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. scandens</td>
<td>Cameroon</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. speciosissimum</td>
<td>Amboina</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. speciosum</td>
<td>San Domingo</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. trichostomum</td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. tuberculatum</td>
<td>Cuba</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C. volubile</td>
<td>Sierra Leone</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M. durantae var. acutiseta</td>
<td>Clerodendron sp.</td>
<td>Uganda</td>
<td>Hansford 1961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M. sakawensis</td>
<td>C. intermedium</td>
<td>Philippines</td>
<td>Baker 1914</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phyllosticta clerodendri</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P. inernis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Physalospora clerodendri</td>
<td>C. infortunatum</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Ramakrishnan 1952</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Podosporium penicillium var. clerodendri</td>
<td>C. commersonii</td>
<td>Philippines</td>
<td>Baker 1914</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puccinia erebia</td>
<td>C. minahassae</td>
<td>Philippines</td>
<td>Baker 1914</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Septoria petrakiana</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S. phlyctenaoides</td>
<td></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>Seymour 1929, Westcott 1971</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Synchytrium sp.</td>
<td>C. infortunatum</td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Srivastava 1985</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tetrachia singularis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Moldenke 1985a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bacteria</td>
<td>Xanthomonas clerodendri</td>
<td>C. phlomoides</td>
<td>India</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Patel et al. 1952</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Viruses</td>
<td>cucumber mosaic virus</td>
<td>C. viscosum</td>
<td>India</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>tobacco ringspot</td>
<td>C. thomsoniae</td>
<td>Wisconsin (USA)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>zonate ringspot</td>
<td>C. thomsoniae</td>
<td>Florida (USA)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Burnett &amp; Youtsey 1962, Westcott 1971</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Comment**

Plants under the name *Clerodendrum chinense* vary greatly in weediness from one region to another. This may be because (i) their genetic constitution varies, (ii) certain environmental conditions (climate, soils) favour weediness in particular regions, (iii) the intensity of effective plant competition may vary, (iv) pressure from natural enemies may vary, and (v) likewise the intensity of human intervention.
There is clear evidence that flower type of *C. chinense* and its varieties vary over its distribution, but no information is available as to the significance of this in relation to potential weediness. All that can be said at this stage is that the seriously weedy form reported only in the Pacific is one that has double, sterile flowers. Since this form only propagates vegetatively (by suckers), all may well be derived from a single clone and possibly as a mutation from *C. chinense* var. *simplex*. This clone may, however, differ in weediness from the non-seeding stocks of the species introduced last century to French Polynesia and Hawaii. Studies employing electrophoresis and molecular techniques are necessary to throw light on this aspect.

There is also clear evidence that moist, fertile soils and abundant sunlight greatly favour growth of *C. chinense*. In Fiji its occupation of the wetter rather than the drier regions of several islands, emphasises the importance of adequate moisture. Thus it is clearly favoured by the rich, moist soils of geologically-recent volcanic islands (Swarbrick 1988), but not by the coral atoll environment, despite its occurrence on Aitutake (Cook Is). It is thus puzzling that it is not an important weed in Hawaii or French Polynesia, where parts at least of the environment would appear to be very suitable, and where it has been naturalised long enough to have become a pest if it could do so.

Competition from other plants may, conceivably, be somewhat less severe in the regions where it has become weedy but, such a phenomenon would be very difficult to characterise.

Insufficient information is available on what natural enemies attack *C. chinense* in its native range. Preliminary surveys at critical seasons in Vietnam, Laos and southern China would provide information on potential biological control agents occurring there and whether it might be fruitful to mount of a major project. The chrysomelid beetles from Vietnam (in particular *Phyllocharis undulata*) and the rust *Aecidium clerodendri* from the Philippines certainly merit further investigation. Tables 5.3 to 5.5 provide some indication of the groups of organisms most likely to be encountered. In view of the comparatively large number of Hemiptera listed in Table 5.5, it would be surprising if *C. chinense* did not prove to be host to a number of species in this order in its area of origin.

The closest relative of *C. chinense* is *C. bungei*, according to an examination of 52 morphological characters of 129 species (Stenzel et al. 1988). *C. bungei* appears to have evolved in the same general region as *C. chinense* and is known from the Chinese provinces of Anhwei, Chekiang, Honan, Hunan, Hupeh, Guangsi, Guangdong, Kiangsi, Kiangsu, Kweichow, Shensi, Sikang, Szechuan and Yunnan. It is also recorded from Hainan Is, Ryukyu Is, Indochina and Sikkim (Moldenke 1971). It has been widely dispersed as an ornamental and is naturalised in many parts of the world, especially Central and South America, but also in Hawaii and Guam. In brief, *C. bungei* may be distinguished by its leaves having serrated edges, and the flowers being single and, usually red to purple-pink, but rarely white. The corolla tube of the flower is several times longer than the calyx whereas, in *C. chinense*, the corolla tube is only slightly longer than the calyx (Moldenke 1985b). Like *C. chinense* it has extra-floral nectaries (Jolivet 1983). Surveys for natural enemies of *C. chinense* in its area of origin should, whenever possible, include observations also on organisms attacking *C. bungei*, since this may give useful information on host specificity.

There is only one species of *Clerodendrum*, namely *C. inerme*, that appears to be native to the oceanic Pacific. This ranges from Pakistan eastwards to Niue, occurring in the Pacific as a littoral shrub. Except for this species, the conservation aspect could be disregarded in the Pacific in considering the suitability of natural enemies belonging to this genus. Of course, the aesthetic importance of any introduced species of *Clerodendrum* would also need to be considered if they were at risk of attack and also the possibility of its attack on teak (Verbenaceae) where this tree is likely to be grown.
Figure 6.1 World distribution of *Portulaca oleracea*
Portulaca oleracea, one of the world’s very worst weeds, is widespread throughout tropical, subtropical and temperate areas.

Some 100 species of insects are reported to attack it. Of these, 13 appear to be restricted to the genus Portulaca and probably several to P. oleracea. Where they occur naturally, three leaf-mining or gall-forming flies, one leaf-mining moth, one leaf-mining sawfly and two weevils all show high specificity to P. oleracea and sufficient capacity to cause damage to be seriously considered as biological control agents.

If this suite of phytophagous insects is not already present, their establishment without their own natural enemies should lead to a significant lowering in the weed status of P. oleracea.

*Portulacea oleracea* is a prime target for an attempt at biological control.
Origin
Pigweed is possibly of Central American origin, although the name ‘porcilaca’ used for *P. oleracea* by Pliny the Elder (23-79 AD) and the view expressed in many botanical texts suggest that it is of Mediterranean or West Asian origin. However, pollen and seeds dating back to 1350 AD have been found in sediments in Ontario; and seeds in Louisiana, Illinois and Kentucky dating between 1000 BC and 750 AD (Miyanishi and Cavers 1980). Furthermore, a larger number of host specific insects have been found in the Americas than in Europe, (see below), suggesting that it has been present longest in the Americas. Its very wide distribution may be due to the fact that seeds eaten by birds have a high viability after passage through the digestive tract (Byrne and McAndrews 1975). The evolutionary centre of the genus *Portulaca* is postulated to be Australia (Geesink 1969) and the family Portulaceae is generally agreed to be of Gondwanan origin.

Distribution
Pigweed is very widespread throughout the tropical, subtropical and temperate regions of the world, including Southeast Asia, Papua New Guinea, Australia and New Zealand. In the oceanic Pacific it occurs in Hawaii and all of the 20 countries belonging to the South Pacific Commission (table 1.1).

Characteristics
Pigweed is a C4, usually diploid annual, reproducing by seed, or by stem fragments on moist soil. In sunlight it is prostrate (Plate 2, Fig. 5) but in partly shaded positions it may grow to 0.5m. The stems are succulent, often reddish, 0.2m to 0.5m long, smooth and fleshy and form mats. The leaves are alternate, flowers are self-pollinated, yellow, sessile and single or several together in the leaf clusters at the ends of branches (Plate 2, Fig. 6). They open only on sunny mornings. The seeds are about 0.5mm in diameter.

Importance
*P. oleracea* is one of the 12 non-cultivated species that have been most successful in colonising new areas (Allard 1965). It is a weed of 45 crops in 81 countries and was ranked 9th of the world’s worst weeds (Holm et al. 1977). It rated equal 32nd in a recent Southeast Asian survey (Waterhouse 1993), 49th in Australia (A.J. Wapshire pers. comm. 1992) and 6th in the Pacific in 1992 (A. Hill pers. comm. 1992). In the tropics it is particularly important in many upland crops, including groundnuts, maize, rice, sorghum, sugar cane and vegetables. Although drought resistant, it thrives in moist fertile soils in cultivated fields and gardens, bare driveways and waste places. There are many ecological types which have enabled it to adapt to most agricultural areas of the world. In the Philippines up to 10,000 and in North America up to 243,000 seeds are produced per plant. The tiny seeds, which survive burial for long periods, are spread by wind, water and with the seeds of crops; and some birds feed on them. They germinate best above 30°C and poorly below 24°C.

Pigweed does not compete well with other weeds. However, it establishes rapidly after soil disturbance and may flower and seed before being outcompeted by taller plants.

The succulent leaves and stems are rich in oxalates and nitrates, which may cause death of livestock. It was one of mankind’s early vegetables and improved varieties (hexaploids) with larger leaves are still eaten. It has been used as an emergency human food in Kiribati in periods of extreme drought, but it has recently become a problem in vegetable gardens where pig or poultry manure is used (G.S. Sandhu, pers. comm. 1992). It is used as food for pigs.

*P. oleracea* is an alternative host of the nematodes *Meloidogyne* sp., *M. incognita*, *Paratylenchus minutus*, *Rotylenchus reniformis* and *Heterodera marioni* and of the viruses causing tobacco mosaic, groundnut rosette, anemone brown ring, aster yellow, beet curly top, chili veinbanding, clover big vein, tobacco broad ring spot, tobacco etch and tobacco streak (Holm et al. 1977).
**Natural enemies**

In view of its very widespread distribution it is perhaps not surprising that pigweed is attacked by a wide range of insects. Thus Bennett and Cruttwell (1972) list 60 species, mainly from the Caribbean and South America, and Romm (1937) 83 mainly from USA, resulting in a total of about 120. Table 6.1 lists 13 insects that, so far as is known, are restricted to *P. oleracea*, or at least to the genus *Portulaca* and table 6.2 additional species most of which are known to be (or suspected of being) polyphagous. It might be thought, perhaps, that most polyphagous insects that encounter pigweed can develop on it, but this is not necessarily so. For example, nymphs of the grasshopper *Heteracris littoralis* that fed on it showed a 70 to 80% mortality and adults were short-lived (Ibrahim 1980).

**Table 6.1  Insects restricted to *P. oleracea* or at least to the genus *Portulaca*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Distribution</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Diptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthomyiidae</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pegomya dolosa</em></td>
<td>Trinidad</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Cruttwell &amp; Bennett 1972a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cecidomyiidae</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Asphondylia portulaca</em></td>
<td>El Salvador, Argentina, Colombia, Bolivia,</td>
<td>Gagné 1968,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Leeeward Is, St Kitts Nevis, Montserrat, Jamaica</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Neolasioptera portulaca</em></td>
<td>Cuba, Florida, St Vincent</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Trinidad, St Kitts Nevis, Montserrat, Jamaica</td>
<td>Gagné 1968,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Lepidoptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heliodinidae</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Heliodine quinqueguttata</em></td>
<td>Trinidad, Montserrat, Puerto Rico</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Cruttwell &amp; Bennett 1972b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Wolcott 1948</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hymenoptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tenthredinidae</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Schizocerella pilicornis</em></td>
<td>California, Mexico, USA, Argentina</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Krombein &amp; Burks 1967</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Maesebeck et al. 1951</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Coleoptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Curculionidae</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aption sp.</em></td>
<td>Brazil</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Baris arctithorax</em></td>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td>D’Araujo et al. 1968</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Baris lorata</em></td>
<td>Sudan</td>
<td>Tawfik et al. 1976</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Baris portulaca</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Marshall 1911</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Centrinaspis perscitus</em></td>
<td>Colombia, Trinidad, USA</td>
<td>Marshall 1916</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Ceutorhynchus oleracea</em></td>
<td>Java</td>
<td>Marshall 1935</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Ceutorhynchus portulaca</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td>Marshall 1916</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Hypurus bertrandi</em></td>
<td>Puerto Rico</td>
<td>Marshall 1916</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>France</td>
<td>Tempère 1943</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td>Tawfik et al. 1976</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>USA, Hawaii</td>
<td>Clement &amp; Norris 1982</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Table 6.2  Additional insects attacking *Portulaca oleracea*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Reported from</th>
<th>Part attacked</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Orthoptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ACRIDIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Melanoplus spretus</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Microcentrum retinerve</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Thysanoptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>PHILOETHRIPIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Haplothrips gowdeyi</em></td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Sakimura 1936</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Haplothrips robustus</em></td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bianchi 1985</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>THripsidae</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Chirothrips manicatus</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Frankliniella tritici</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>flowers</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Scirtothrips citri</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>flowers, and buds</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Thrips tabaci</em></td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>terminals</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hemiptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ALEYROIDIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Bemisia tabaci</em></td>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td></td>
<td>Tawfik et al. 1976</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>APHIDIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis</em> sp.</td>
<td>Venezuela</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis craccivora</em></td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>ANIC</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis cytisorum</em> (= <em>A. laburni</em>)</td>
<td>Trinidad, Asia</td>
<td>young stems</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis euphorbiae</em> (= <em>Macrosiphum solanifolii</em>)</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>terminals</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis fabae</em></td>
<td>Asia</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis gossypii</em></td>
<td>USA, St Kitts</td>
<td>under leaves</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis medicaginis</em></td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>shoots</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis middletoni</em> (= <em>A. maidiradicis</em>)</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>roots</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis nasturtii</em></td>
<td>Patch 1938</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis persicae</em></td>
<td>Patch 1938</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis plantaginis</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>roots, leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis pomi</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>buds, shoots</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis rhamni</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>under leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis rumicis</em></td>
<td>Patch 1938</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aphis spiraecola</em> (= <em>A. citricola</em>)</td>
<td>USA, UK</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aulacorthum solani</em></td>
<td>Patch 1938</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Brachyunguis (= Xerophilaphis) plotnikovi</em></td>
<td>Asia</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Myzus persicae</em></td>
<td>USA, Indonesia</td>
<td>stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Myzus pseudosolani</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pemphigus brevicornis</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>roots</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Toxoptera aurantii</em></td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>ANIC</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>CICADELLIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Agallia albidula</em></td>
<td>Brazil</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Agallia configurata</em></td>
<td>Trinidad</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued on next page)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Reported from</th>
<th>Part attacked</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Agallia sanguinolenta</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Empoasca sp.</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eutettix tenellus</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Coccidae</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coccus hesperidum</td>
<td>Venezuela</td>
<td>stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Saissetia coffeae</td>
<td>Brazil</td>
<td>stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Pseudococcidae</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ferrisia virgata</td>
<td>Brazil</td>
<td>leaves &amp; stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phenacoccus solani</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>roots</td>
<td>Swezey 1935</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pseudococcus brevipes</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pseudococcus solani</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td></td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pseudococcus virgatus</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td></td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rhizoecus kondonis</td>
<td>Japan</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Margarodididae</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Icerya purchasi</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Lygaeidae</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Geocoris bullatus</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nysius coenosolus</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Beardsley 1977</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nysius cymoides</td>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td></td>
<td>Tawfik et al. 1976</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nysius delectus</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nysius ericae</td>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nysius terrestris</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nysius sp. nr vinitor</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Beardsley 1979</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nysius sp.</td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sphragislicus nebulosus</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MIRIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Psallus serius</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>terminals</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pycnoderes quadrimaculatus</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Illingworth 1930</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Pentatomidae</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scaptocerus castanea</td>
<td>Brazil</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Coleoptera</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Chrysomelidae</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bruchus orventatus</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>seeds</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diabrotica duodecimpunctata</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diabrotica longicornis</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>roots</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diabrotica vittata</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Disonycha caroliniana</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Disonycha crenicollis</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Disonycha mellicollis</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Graphops pubescens</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>roots</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Monolepta sp. nr morio</td>
<td>Rhodesia</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Systena s-littera</td>
<td>Venezuela</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Systena taeniata</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Curculionidae</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Faustinus apicalis</td>
<td>Venezuela</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Faustinus cubae</td>
<td>Venezuela</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued on next page)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Reported from</th>
<th>Part attacked</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hyperodes echinatus</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Microlarinaeus lypyriformis</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>leaves &amp; stems</td>
<td>Davis &amp; Krauss 1966</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sitona hispidulus</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sitona lepidus (= S. flavescens)</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>roots</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MELOIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pseudomeloe pustulata</td>
<td>Argentina</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MELOLONTHIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Holotrichia leucophthalma</td>
<td>Malaysia</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diptera</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AGROMYZIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phytomyza palliata</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaf miner</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ANTHOMYIIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Delia platura (= Hylemya cilioura)</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>sprouting seeds</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CECIDOMYIIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Campylomyza sp.</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>roots</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joannisia sp.</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>roots</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EMPIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Platypalpus crassifemoris</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>roots</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SYRIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paragus tibialis</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>tunnels stems</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sphaerophoria cylindrica</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lepidoptera</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COLEOPHORIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleophora sp.</td>
<td>Trinidad</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LYCAENIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Callicista bubastus</td>
<td>Trinidad</td>
<td>leaves &amp; stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NOCTUIDAE</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agrotis crinigera</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>stems</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agrotis (= Euxoa) radians</td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agrotis repleta</td>
<td>Venezuela</td>
<td>stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agrotis ipsilon</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>stems</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Discestra (= Mamestra) trifolii</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>stems</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elaphra nucicolora</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Swezey 1951</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Euxoa kerri</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Euxoa messoria</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Euxoa tessellata</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Felita malefida</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Felita subterranea</td>
<td>Venezuela</td>
<td>stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lycophota infecta</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves &amp; stems</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lycophota margaritosa</td>
<td>USA, Hawaii</td>
<td>stems</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lycophota saucia</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>buds</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mythimna (= Cirphis) loreyi</td>
<td>Philippines</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peridroma incivis</td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spodoptera (= Prodenia) eridania</td>
<td>Venezuela</td>
<td>leaves &amp; stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spodoptera frugiperda</td>
<td>Brazil, USA</td>
<td>leaves &amp; stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continued on next page)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Reported from</th>
<th>Part attacked</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>*Spodoptera (= Prodenia)</td>
<td>Venezuela</td>
<td>leaves &amp; stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>latifascia</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Spodoptera littoralis</em></td>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td></td>
<td>Tawfik et al. 1976</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>NYMPHALIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Euptoieta claudia</em></td>
<td>Brazil, USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Hypolimnas bolina</em></td>
<td>Java</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Kalshoven 1981</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Hypolimnas misippus</em></td>
<td>Australia, Brazil,</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Puerto Rico</td>
<td></td>
<td>Common &amp; Waterhouse 1981,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Junonia villida</em></td>
<td>Australia</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Common &amp; Waterhouse 1981</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>OECPHORIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Theama argyrophorum</em></td>
<td>Argentina</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>PYRALIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Epipagis cambogialis</em></td>
<td>Brazil</td>
<td>leaves &amp; stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Helulina undalis</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Hymenia fascialis</em></td>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Hymenia recurvalis</em></td>
<td>Trinidad, Hawaii</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Swezey 1935</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Loxostege bifidalis</em></td>
<td>Brazil</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Loxostege similalis</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Nonosphila noctuella</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>tunnel stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Ostrinia (= Pyrausta) nubilalis</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>tunnel stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Psara bipunctalis</em></td>
<td>Trinidad</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>SIPHINGIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aegris (= Herse) convolvuli</em></td>
<td>India</td>
<td></td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Copidryas gloveri</em></td>
<td>USA</td>
<td>leaves</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Hyles euphorbiarum</em></td>
<td>Brazil</td>
<td>leaves &amp; stems</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Hyles (= Celerio) lineata</em></td>
<td>Argentina, Venezuela,</td>
<td>stems and leaves</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>USA, Hawaii</td>
<td></td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>HYMENOPTERA</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>BRACONIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Diospilus</em> sp.</td>
<td></td>
<td>roots</td>
<td>Romm 1937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>EULOPHIDAE</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Ceratoneura sp.</em></td>
<td>Trinidad</td>
<td>flower buds</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Ceratoneura petiolata</em></td>
<td>Puerto Rico</td>
<td>flower buds</td>
<td>Bennett &amp; Cruttwell 1972</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

It is of interest that 7 of the restricted species listed in Table 6.1 appear to have originated in the Americas, 2 each in Africa and India, but only 1 each in France and Southeast Asia. With the exception of the weevil *Ceutorhynchus portulacae*, described from *P. oleracea* in Java, no reports have been found of insects possibly restricted to pigweed in Southeast Asia or the Pacific. However, the host specificity of only two (*Baris arctithorax* and *Hypurus bertrandi*) of the eight weevils listed is at all well known. Host specificity has, however, been investigated by Bennett and Cruttwell (1972) or Cruttwell and Bennett (1972a, b) for the 5 species of Diptera, Lepidoptera and Hymenoptera listed in Table 6.1. In Hawaii *Hypurus bertrandi* (originally misidentified by G.K. Marshall as *Ceutorhynchus* sp.) was reported in 1958 to be numerous enough to defoliate the plant in many cases and to cause it to collapse as if sprayed with some herbicide (Bianchi 1955).
Although listed by Holm et al. (1977) as 9th of the world's worst weeds, it is interesting
that, as of 1979, it was not (or no longer) listed as a noxious weed in Hawaii, although
it had a high hazard status for each island (Tagawa 1979). Nevertheless, in 1992,
Hawaiian weed scientists considered it as one of their worst weeds (W.C. Mitchell pers.
comm. 1992). It is thus unclear what degree of control *Hypurus bertrandi* and the range
of non-specific insects attacking pigweed (Table 6.2) are now exercising.

*P. oleracea* is attacked in Hawaii, California, Jamaica, Venezuela, Europe and Sudan
by the fungus *Dichotomosphthora portulacae*, by *D. lutea (= D. indica*) in India and Ontario
(Klisiewicz et al. 1983, Mehrlich and Fitzpatrick 1935, Rao 1966) and also in Europe
and the West Indies (IMI 1992). It is attacked in USA by *Bipolaris (= Helminthosporium)
portulacae* (Rader 1948). *B. portulacae* also occurs on *Portulaca grandiflora* in Canada
(IMI 1992). The white rust *Albugo portulacae* occurs in Europe, Africa, Asia, North,
Central and South America (IMI 1992). In Canada it is common on *P. oleracea* and
sometimes locally destructive under favourable conditions, but is probably not an
important controlling factor (Miyanishi and Cavers 1980). On the other hand, *Dichotomosphthora lutea* was lethal during the winter in India (Rao 1966) and *Bipolaris portulacae* was found killing pigweed in widely separated areas in New York State,
although it was concluded that, under dry summer conditions, the fungus was of little
value in controlling the weed (Rader 1948). In California *Dichotomosphthora portulacae*
causued dark discoloration and constriction of the stems, and roots were invaded later,
damage which, when combined with attack by the insects, *Hypurus bertrandi* and
*Schizocerella pilicornis*, resulted in plant death. Suspensions of the fungus grown on
potato-dextrose agar successfully infected young plants under conditions of high but not
of low humidity (Klisiewicz et al. 1983). Unfortunately, *D. portulacae* is reported to
occur on other plants, including *Basella rubra*, cactus, *Capsicum annuum*, *Glycine max*
even in a human corneal ulcer (IMI 1992). Unless, therefore, there are strains specific
to *Portulaca oleracea*, it could not be used as a mycoherbicide.

Other pathogens reported to be specific to *P. oleracea* are *Albugo portulacearum* (Poland), *Ascochyta portulacae* (USSR), *Cercospora portulacae* (India), *Cercospharella dominicana* (Dominica) and *Dendrographium lucknowense* (India). The non-specific *Bipolaris indica* occurs on *P. oleracea*, and also on a wide range of agriculturally important
and other plants (IMI 1992).

If any of these fungi prove to be adequately specific, it is possible that it (they) might
be introduced to assist in the biological control of pigweed in situations where the
humidity remains high over long periods.

**Attempts at biological control**

No attempts have been made to introduce natural enemies for the biological control of
*P. oleracea*. However, the weevil *Hypurus bertrandi* has made its way, unaided, from
France to USA and the sawfly *Schizocerella pilicornis* from the Americas to eastern
Australia. There are no reports of any attack by either species in their new regions on
plants other than *P. oleracea*.

**Biology of the major natural enemies**

*Pegomya dolosa* (Anthomyiidae: Diptera)

Eggs of this fly are laid singly on the underside of the pigweed leaf and hatch after about
3 days. The larvae are leaf miners and devour the contents of the leaf, then emerge to enter
another. Two or more leaves are commonly destroyed. After about 7 days, the 6 to 7mm
long larvae leave the plant to pupate in the soil, leading to 3 to 4mm long adults. Two
wasps were occasionally found attacking *Pegomya* in Trinidad, a solitary egg parasitoid
and a solitary larval-pupal pteromalid.
Of a large number of economic and other plants tested, including *Portulaca grandiflora*, *P. pilosa* and *P. quadrifida*, all except *Portulaca grandiflora* were rejected by *Pegomya* larvae. Larvae on *P. grandiflora* readily mined and fed in the leaves, but all died within 3 days, possibly due to some toxic substance or deficiency in nutrition. It is possible that *Pegomya* is monophagous.

With one exception, all species in the genus *Pegomya* whose host plants are known, attack plants in only one family. Thus, although it is conceivable that *Pegomya* might attack plants of other genera in the Portulacaceae, it is quite unlikely that plants in other families would be attacked. Cruttwell & Bennett (1972a) conclude that *Pegomya* sp. could be safely introduced for the biological control of *P. oleracea*.

**Asphondylia portulacae** (Cecidomyiidae: Diptera)
Eggs of this flower gall midge are inserted into the very small buds of pigweed which then develop abnormally. Usually only one larva develops per bud, occupying a chamber in the swollen receptacle. Prior to pupating in the bud the larva forms a window, leaving only the outer cuticle through which the adult escapes. Attacked flowers do not produce seed. *A. portulacae* is heavily attacked by parasitoids (Bennett and Cruttwell 1972).

The species of *Asphondylia* are considered to be highly host specific. Fifty two of the 54 species in this group are known only from a single host and each of the two exceptions only attacks two plants of the same genus. It was postulated that host specificity testing is unnecessary (Bennett and Cruttwell 1972).

**Neolasioptera portulacae** (Cecidomyiidae: Diptera)
Females of the midge cause elongate to globular stem galls up to 1.5cm in diameter. Each gall contains several (up to 10) larvae. Galls retard, or prevent, flower and seed production. In open, less fertile sites every pigweed stem may be infested, but in lush growth or shaded sites the level of attack is usually very low. Larvae pupate within the gall after creating a window of plant cuticle through which the adult escapes. *N. portulacae* is attacked heavily by parasitoids.

With the exception of one species, which attacks two plant genera, each of the 51 species of the subgenus *Neolasioptera* is restricted to one plant genus. Bennett and Cruttwell (1972) believe that *N. portulacae* is sufficiently host specific to be employed for biological control without further testing.

**Heliodine quinqueguttata** (Heliodinidae: Lepidoptera)
This moth lays its eggs singly or in groups of up to 6. They hatch in 5 to 6 days and larvae wander some distance over the leaf before mining into it or into the stem or a seed capsule. As plant tissues collapse or decay, the larva leaves the mine to enter the plant elsewhere. After 7 to 8 days the fifth instar larva leaves the mine and pupates within a flimsy silk cocoon attached to the stems or leaves of the plant.

No natural enemies of the eggs or pupae are known, but larvae are attacked by a solitary endoparasitoid, *Pholetesor = (Apanteles) sp.* (*circumscriptus* group).

Host specificity tests were carried out on a wide variety of economic and non-economic plants, but development was completed only on *Portulaca oleracea*, *P. pilosa* and *P. grandiflora*. However, in the field in Trinidad neither *P. pilosa* nor the weedy *P. quadrifida* were ever attacked and *P. grandiflora* was not grown. Available records indicate that no *Heliodine* species attacks crops and that each species is restricted to a single plant family. It was considered that *H. quinquegutta* was sufficiently specific to be used for biological control (Cruttwell and Bennett 1972b).
**Schizocerella pilicornis** (Tenthredinidae: Hymenoptera)

This leaf mining sawfly occurs naturally from Argentina (and Brazil) to USA (Muesebeck et al. 1951) and was accidentally introduced from USA to Australia (Queensland and New South Wales) (Benson 1962, Krombein & Burks 1967). There are two biotypes, each of which breeds true. The larvae of one, which is widespread, mines the leaves, whereas the larvae of the other (from Mississippi northwards in USA) feeds externally on the leaves (Gorske and Sell 1976). Eggs are normally laid singly in the edges of the leaves, each female laying up to 40 eggs soon after emergence and mating. The mining larvae damage the leaves extensively, moving from one to another when a leaf collapses. At least two leaves are destroyed by each larva. The fully fed larvae enter the soil and spin cocoons. There are at least two generations a year and certainly many more in warmer areas, since the life cycle can be completed in 13 days (Clement and Norris 1982). Prepupae in diapause overwinter in the soil in California. (Force 1965, Garlick 1922, Gomes de Lima 1968, Gorske et al. 1977, Webster and Mally 1900).

In California 58 to 84% of *P. oleracea* leaves harboured eggs or larvae of *S. pilicornis* and such severe damage may be caused that plants are defoliated and sometimes killed. Adults live for a day and do not feed.

*S. pilicornis* has not been recorded from any plant other than *P. oleracea* and is believed to be monophagous, although no laboratory tests have been done for host specificity. A transovarially transmitted microsporidian, *Nosema pilicornis*, causes high mortality in infected *S. pilicornis* larvae in USA and should be eliminated in any transfer of the sawfly to new areas (Gorske and Maddox 1978).

An 80% loss of sugarbeet yield was recorded in California when *S. pilicornis* was prevented by insecticide application from attacking *P. oleracea* plants which were occurring at a density of 20 or more per m of crop row. Insecticide-protected weeds produced about 4 times as much seed as unprotected plants, although the latter still produced enough (4000 to 5000/m³/day) to maintain a high seed bank in the soil (Norris, 1985).

**Apion sp.** (Curculionidae: Coleoptera)

In Brazil, *Apion* sp. causes gall formation in the flower buds of *P. oleracea* (D’Araujo et al. 1968) and *Apion* larvae causing similar and significant damage were encountered in north Argentina (Bennett and Cruttwell 1972, Bennett pers. comm. 1992).

**Baris arctithorax** (Curculionidae: Coleoptera)

This weevil causes gall formation on pigweed in Egypt, but does not attack any economic plant. Eggs are laid singly in stem cavities gnawed by the female. The plant tissue then develops abnormally to produce single closed galls, but the most serious damage is caused by larvae feeding inside the stems. Young infested plants produce weak vegetative growth and few seeds and may be killed. Adult weevils feed on the leaf surface. Egg development takes 4 days at 29.5°C, larval development 28 days at 24.6°C, the prepupal stage (in the soil) lasts 2.5 days at 29.9°C and the pupal stage 6.9 days at 29.5°C. The pre-oviposition, oviposition and post-oviposition periods are 8.5, 33.1 and 5.8 days respectively at 28.1°C. After 74% infestation of plants in summer a peak of 95% occurred in autumn. (Awadallah et al. 1976, Tawfik et al. 1976).

**Hypurus bertrandi** (Curculionidae: Coleoptera)

The portulaca leaf-mining weevil has spread from France to Hawaii (1950) (Davis 1955, Maehler 1954), and California (1980). Eggs are deposited singly in the parenchyma and larvae mine the leaves. Infested leaves wilt and fall and the larvae then migrate to fresh leaves, often destroying four or five. However, if no undamaged leaves are available, they
attack the outer tissues of the stems. Pupation occurs in a cell formed by soil particles cemented by fecal secretion. In France adults overwinter under the bark of trees. They feed on leaf margins, stems and developing seed capsules. *H. berirandi* develops from egg to adult in 10 days at 32.2°C and 16 hrs light and, in France, there are at least 3 overlapping generations a year. It is heavily parasitised there by a number of wasps. *P. oleracea* is its only reported host plant (Tawfik et al. 1976, Clement and Norris 1982, Hoffmann and Tempère 1944, Norris 1985, Tempère 1943, 1944, 1950).

**Comment**
The family Portulacaceae is relatively small with 20 genera and about 250 species worldwide. Of these, the genus *Portulaca* contains some 100 to 125 species (West 1990) (or 'no more than 15 good species': Geesink 1969), all tropical, subtropical or temperate. Of the Portulacaceae, relatively few are cultivated: *Portulaca grandiflora* as a brightly flowering ornamental, *Talinum triangulare* and *T. paniculatum* as pot herbs (but they may also be agricultural weeds), *Montia fontana* for salads, *Lewisia* spp. (mostly alpine herbs) as ornamental rock plants, and the African *Anacampseros* as a succulent, but these are not of great economic importance (Cruttwell and Bennett 1972a). Other species, such as *Portulaca pilosa* and *P. quadrifida* are weeds. This situation simplifies, particularly for the Pacific, the range of tests necessary to determine whether natural enemies have adequate host specificity. Although the specificity of the seven major natural enemies dealt with above appears to be adequate in their countries of origin, consideration still needs to be given to plants of importance that have not been tested, or not exposed to natural infestation by the agents in the field.

Each of these natural enemies is capable of causing significant damage to *P. oleracea* and some of them even death. If a group of them is assembled in a country, they should be capable of stressing pigweed sufficiently to reduce greatly its competitiveness and seed production, particularly if their own natural enemies are rigorously excluded during transfers.

As the first step in any biological control program, it will be necessary to carry out a survey of the organisms already attacking *P. oleracea* throughout the Pacific and particularly in the countries reporting most concern with this weed (Table 1.1).
References


ANIC. Data from specimen labels in the Australian National Insect Collection, Canberra.


References


7 References
Biological Control: Pacific Prospects — Supplement 2


References


References


Noble, N.S. 1942. Melittobia (Synlomosphyrum) indicum (Silv.) (Hymen., Chalcidoidea), a parasite of the Queensland fruit fly, Struneta tryoni (Frogg.). Proceedings of the Linnean Society of New South Wales 67: 269-276.


References


Takahashi, R. 1936b. Some Aleyrodidae, Aphididae, Coccidae (Homoptera), and Thysanoptera from Micronesia. Tenthredo 1: 109-120.


Waterhouse, D.F. 1993. The major arthropod pests and weeds of agriculture in Southeast Asia: distribution, importance and origin. 141pp. Australian Centre for International Agriculture, Canberra, Australia.


Veenenat, E.P. 1804. Jardin de la Malmaison à Paris. 2(12) 70.


Waterston, J.M. 1941. A list of food plants of some Bermuda insects, Department of Agriculture, Bermuda. 63pp.


Williams, D.J. 1985b. Some scale insects (Hom., Coccoidea) from the island of Nauru. The Entomologists' Monthly Magazine 121 (1448/1451): 53.


Index of Scientific Names of Insects

Abgrallaspis cyanophylli, (Signoret) Hem.: Diaspididae 88
Aceratoneuromyia indica (Silvestri) Hym.: Eulophidae 21, 22, 27, 29-34, 36, 37, 39, 43, 45
Acherontia styx (Westwood) Lep.: Sphingidae 84, 90
Acherontia albotela, Diachasminorpha albogata, Luperomorpha albogata
Achidodes Col.: Curculionidae 81
Aleurocanthus alternans Cohic Hem.: Aleyrodidae 88
Aleurocanthus descarpentriest Cohic Hem.: Aleyrodidae 86
Aleurocanthus aneuvittata, Bactrocera anomaia, Dirhina anhracina, Dirhina
Aonidiella aurantii (Maskell) Hem.: Diaspididae 88
Aonidiella orientalis (Newstead) Hem.: Diaspididae 88
Aonidiella pectinatus Lind. Hem.: Diaspididae 88
Aonidiella aurantii (Maskell) Hem.: Diaspididae 88
Aonidiella orientalis (Newstead) Hem.: Diaspididae 88
Aonidiella pectinatus Lind. Hem.: Diaspididae 88
Apaniely, see Pholetesor
Aphidius, Pseudischynnaspis alternans, Aleurocanthus aneuvittata, Bactrocera anomaia, Bactrocera anhracina, Dirhina anhracina, Dirhina
Aonidiella aurantii (Maskell) Hem.: Diaspididae 88
Aonidiella orientalis (Newstead) Hem.: Diaspididae 88
Aonidiella pectinatus Lind. Hem.: Diaspididae 88
Apaniely, see Pholetesor
Aphis Hem.: Aphididae 98
Aphis citricola, see Aphis spiraecola
Aphis gossypii Glover Hem.: Aphididae 85, 86, 98
Aphis laburni, see Aphis cylisorum
Aphis middletonii Thomas Hem.: Aphididae 98
Aphis nasturtii Kaltenbach Hem.: Aphididae 86, 98
Aphis persicae Sulzer Hem.: Aphididae 98
Aphis plantaginis Goese Hem.: Aphididae 98
Aphis pomif De C. Hem.: Aphididae 98
Aphis rhanni Fons. Hem.: Aphididae 98
Aphis rumicis Linnaeus Hem.: Aphididae 98
Aphis spiraeola Patch Hem.: Aphididae 86, 98
Aphis fabae Scopoli Hem.: Aphididae 86, 98
Aphis armigera, Helicoverpa armigera
Aphidius portulacae Möhn Dipt.: Cecidomyiidae 97, 103
Aphidius cyanoaphyli, Signoret Hem.: Diaspididae 88
Aphidius destructor Signoret Hem.: Diaspididae 137
Aphidius excisus Green Hem.: Diaspididae 88
Aphidius lataniae, see Hemiberlesia lataniae
Aspidomorphia furcata (Thunberg) Col.: Chrysomelidae 81
Asterolecanium pustulans (Cockerell) Hem.: Asterolecaniidae 87
Asterolecaniidae 87
Asterolecaniidae 87
Asterolecaniidae 87
Asterolecaniidae 87
Asterolecaniidae 87
Bactrocera decumana
Bactrocera curvipennis
Bactrocera cucurbitae
Bactrocera caledoniensis
Bactrocera cacuminata
Bactrocera biarcuata
Bactrocera barringtoniae
Bactrocera atra
Bactrocera bancroftii
Bactrocera aterrima
Bactrocera aenigmatica
Aulacophora Col.: Chrysomelidae 137
Aulacorthum magnoliae Essig and Kuwana Hem.: Aphididae 86
Aulacorthum solani (Kaltenbach) Hem.: Aphididae 98
Auranti, Aonidiella
Auranti, Toxoptera
Auponcata, Wasmania
Australis, Scapanes
Austroopius fijiensis, see Psyttalia fijiensis
Bactrocera Dipt.: Tephritidae 12, 18
Bactrocera aenigmatica (Malloch) Dipt.: Tephritidae 12
Bactrocera aithogaster Drew Dipt.: Tephritidae 12
Bactrocera aeneufulvata (Drew) Dipt.: Tephritidae 13
Bactrocera anomala (Drew) Dipt.: Tephritidae 12
Bactrocera aterrima (Drew) Dipt.: Tephritidae 12
Bactrocera atra (Malloch) Dipt.: Tephritidae 12
Bactrocera bancroftii (Tryon) Dipt.: Tephritidae 18
Bactrocera barringtoniae (Tryon) Dipt.: Tephritidae 13
Bactrocera bicaudata (Walker) Dipt.: Tephritidae 12
Bactrocera cacuminata (Hering) Dipt.: Tephritidae 26-28
Bactrocera caledoniensis Drew Dipt.: Tephritidae 12, 18
Bactrocera cucurbitae (Coquillett) Dipt.: Tephritidae 4, 9, 13-16, 18, 20-25, 33-36, 38, 40-44, 46, 47
Bactrocera curvipennis (Froggatt) Dipt.: Tephritidae 8, 12, 14, 17, 34, 35, 40
Bactrocera decumana (Drew) Dipt.: Tephritidae 12
Bactrocera tryoni (Froggatt)  
Dipt.: Tephritidae 4, 9, 12, 14, 19, 25-28, 33, 40-44

Bactrocera turneri Drew Dipt.:  
Tephritidae 12

Bactrocera umbrosa (Fabricius)  
Dipt.: Tephritidae 6, 13, 14, 19

Bactrocera unifasciata  
Dipt.: Tephritidae 12

Bactrocera unipunctata  
Dipt.: Tephritidae 13

Bactrocera varipes  
Dipt.: Tephritidae 12

Bactrocera xanthodes  
Dipt.: Tephritidae 5, 9, 13, 14, 20, 22, 30, 32, 35, 37, 42, 45, 46

Bactrocerae, Phaenocarpa  
bancroftii, Bactrocera  
Baris arctithorax  
(Pie) Col.:  
Curculionidae 97, 101, 104

Baris lorata  
Marshall Col.:  
Curculionidae 97

Baris portulacae  
Marshall Col.:  
Curculionidae 97

barringtoniae, Bactrocera  
basalis, Chrysopa  
Bemisia tabaci  
(Gennadius)  
Hem.: Aleyrodidae 86, 98

bevisi, Fopius  
biracuata, Bactrocera  
bicolor, Alagoasa  
bifidalis, Loxostege  
binalalis, Crocidolomia  
Biosteres Hym.:  
Braconidae 37

Biosteres angaleti, see  
Diachasmimorpha  
albopalpus, Fopius  
Biosteres arisanus, see  
Fopius  
Biosteres carinatus, see  
Fopius  
Biosteres carinatus, see  
Fopius  
Biosteres comperei, see  
Diachasmimorpha  
longicaudata  
Biosteres deeralensis, see  
Fopius  
Biosteres formosanus, see  
Diachasmimorpha  
longicaudata  
Biosteres fullawayi (Silvestri)  
Hym.:  
Braconidae 20, 22, 27, 39

Biosteres giffardii (Silvestri)  
Hym.:  
Braconidae 22, 39

Biosteres hageni, see  
Diachasmimorpha hageni  
Biosteres kraussii, see  
Diachasmimorpha kraussii  
Biosteres longicaudatus, see  
Diachasmimorpha  
longicaudata  
Biosteres oophilus, see  
Fopius  
arisanus  
Biosteres persulcatus (Silvestri)  
Hym.:  
Braconidae 44

Biosteres persulcatus, see also  
Fopius  
Brevicornis, Pemphigus  
brevicornis, Pseudococcus  
brevicaulis, Frankliniella  
Bronislaw longissima (Gestro)  
Col.:  
Chrysomelidae 137

Bruchus orventalus  
Horn. Col.:  
Brevipalpus  
bubastus, Callicisla  
bullatus, Geocoris  
Burmsleres Marshall Col.:  
Curculionidae 97

caledoniensis, Bactrocera  
Callicista bubastus Cramer  
Lep.:  
Lycaenidae 100  
cambobialis, Epipagis  
carneroni, Spalangia  
Campylomyza Dipt.:  
Cecidomyiidae 100  
capitata, Ceratitis  
capparidis, Coccus  
cardinalis, Rodolia  
carinae, Fopius  
carnea, Chrysoperla  
cariolinana, Disonomycha  
carpomyiæ, Fopius  
castranea, Scaptocerus  
caudatus, Fopius  
caudatus, Rhynchosteres  
Celerio euphorbiarum, see  
Hyles euphorbiarum  
Celerio lineata, see  
Hyles  
lineata

ceramicus, Xyleutes  
Ceratitis capitata (Wiedemann)  
Dipt.:  
Tephritidae 9, 11, 15, 20, 21, 23, 25, 26, 38, 40-43

Ceratoneura Hym.:  
Eulophidae 101

Ceratoneura petiolata Ashmead  
Hym.:  
Eulophidae 101

Centrinaspis perscittus Herbst.  
Col.:  
Curculionidae 97

cervinus, Dihammus  
Ceutorhynchus cleracea  
Marshall Col.:  
Curculionidae 97

Ceutorhynchus portulacæ  
Marshall Col.:  
Curculionidae 97, 101

Chelisoches moria (Fabricius)  
Derm.: Chelisochidae 24, 36

Chirothrips manicatus Hal.  
Thy.:  
Thripidae 98

Chrysophalas dictyospemì  
(Morgan) Hem.:  
Diaspididae 83, 88

Chrysopa Neur.:  
Chrysopidae 54, 58

Chrysopa basalis Walker Neur.:  
Chrysopidae 54, 59

Chrysoperla carnea(Stephens)  
Neur.:  
Chrysopidae 54

ciliatus, Dacus  
cingalese, Paracopium  
Cirphis loreyi, see  
Mythimna  
loreyi

cirrhipediformis, Coccus  
cirripediformis, Gascardia  
cliri, Planococcus  
cliri, Unaspis  
ciricola, Aphis  
ciricola, Sinomegoura  
Cladocera uniformis Jacoby  
Col.:  
Chrysomelidae 89

Clania cramerii (Westwood)  
Lep.:  
Psychidae 90  
clandia, Eupiptoieta  
Cleorina dohertyi, Jacoby Col.:  
Chrysomelidae 81

clerodendri, Aphis  
clerodendri, Colpoptera  
clerodendri, Prociphilus  
crenus, Euchrysops
coccidivora, Pullus
Coccinia arcuata, see
Harmonia oeciaculata
Coccus acuminatus Signoret
Hem.: Coccidae 87
Coccus capparidis (Green)
Hem.: Coccidae 87
Coccus cirripediformis
Comstock Hem.: Coccidae 87
Coccus hesperidum Linnaeus
Hem.: Coccidae 83, 84, 87,
99
Coelophora inaequalis
Fabricius Col.: Coccinellidae 54, 58
coenosulus, Nysius
coffeae, Saissetia
coffeae, Zeuxis
Colaspoides polypus Lefèvre
Col.: Chrysomelidae 81
Coleophora Lep.: Coleophoridae 100
Coloptera clerodendri Dozier
Hem.: Issidae 83
conjigurata, Agallia
compactus, Xylosandrus
coneolor, Psyttalia
convolvuli, Agrius
Copidryas gloveri Grote Lep.: Sphingidae 101
Cosmopolites soridus (Germar)
Col.: Curculionidae 137
craccivora, Aphis
craterii, Clania
crassifemoros, Platypalpus
crenicollis, Disonycha
crifter, Argoits
Crocidoloma binotalis, see
Crocidoloma pavonana
Crocidoloma pavonana
(Fabricius) Lep.: Pyralidae 84, 85, 137
cruanii, Graeffea
Cryptochetum Dipt.: Cryptochetidae 55, 62
Cryptochetum grandicorne
Rondani Dipt.: Cryptochetidae 49, 54, 55, 61,
62, 63
Cryptochetum iceryae
(Willistont) Dipt.: Cryptochetidae 55, 61, 62, 63
Cryptolaemus montivlori
Mulsant Col.: Coccinellidae 54, 57, 58
cubae, Faustinus
cubana, Heteropsyilla
cucurbitae, Bactrocera
curipennis, Bactrocera
cyanipennis, Omphoita
cyanicornis, Phyllocharis
cyanophylli, ABRALLASPI
cyanophylli, Aspidiotus
Cylas fornicatus (Fabricius)
Col.: Apionidae 137
cylindrica, Sphaerophoria
cymoides, Nysius
cytisorum, Aphis
daci, Aganaspis
Dacus citratus Loew Dipt.: Tephritidae 23
Dacus smieroides (Walker)
Dipt.: Tephritidae 38
Dacus solomonensis Malloch
Dipt.: Tephritidae 8, 11, 13,
14, 22
Dacus tryoni, see Bactrocera
tryoni
dacusii, Diachasmimorpha
decumana, Bactrocera
deerens, Fopius
delus, Nysius
Deila platuna (Meigen) Dipt.:
Anthomyiidae 100
descarpentres, Aleurocanthus
desideratus, Fopius
destructor, Aspidiotus
destructor, Gascodaria
Diabrotica duodecimpunctata
(Fabricius) Col.:
Chrysomelidae 99
Diabrotica longicornis (Say)
Col.: Chrysomelidae 99
Diabrotica vitata (Fabricius)
Col.: Chrysomelidae 99
Diachasma tryoni, see
Diachasmimorpha tryoni

Diachasmimorpha albimarginata
(Cameron) Hym.: Braconidae
22, 23, 25, 38, 39, 46
Diachasmimorpha dacusii
(Cameron) Hym.: Braconidae
10, 22-25, 34, 38, 39, 46
Diachasma fullawayi, see
Biostratus fulaxwayi
Diachasmimorpha hageni
(Fullaway) Hym.: Braconidae
22, 29-32, 38, 39
Diachasmimorpha kraussii
(Fullaway) Hym.: Braconidae
26, 28, 37, 39, 40
Diachasmimorpha longicaudata
(Ashmead) Hym.: Braconidae
9, 21, 22, 27-30, 32-36, 39-41,
44, 45; vars 31, 34, 36, 40
Diachasmimorpha tryoni
(Cameron) Hym.: Braconidae
20, 26, 29, 33, 39, 40, 44
Diactista obliqua, see
Spilosoma obliqua
Diactista rodopphi Walker
Lep.: Arctiidae 90
Diaphania hyalinata (Linnaeus)
Lep.: Sphingidae 83, 84
dictyospermi, Chrysophalum
Dihammus cervinus Hope Col.:
Cerambycidae 89
Diospis Hym.: Braconidae 101
Dirhus Hym.: Chalcididae 23,
26
Dirhus anthracina Walker
Hym.: Chalcididae 20, 24, 25,
27-31, 34, 37, 39, 43
Dirhus auratus, see Dirhus
anthracina
Dirhus giffardii, see Dirhus
anthracina
Dirhus himalayanus
Westwood Hym.: Chalcididae
23, 39
Dirhus laurazonis, see
Dirhus himalayanus
Discestra trifolii (Hufnagel)
Lep.: Noctuidae 100
Disonycha caroliniana
(Fabricius) Col.:
Chrysomelidae 99
Disonycha crenicollis (Say)
Col.: Chrysomelidae 99
Disonycha melicollis (Say)
Col.: Chrysomelidae 99
dispersus, Aleurodus
distincta, Bactrocera
dohertyi, Cleorina
dolosa, Pegomyia
dorsalis, Bactrocera
Drosicha mangiferae Green
Hem.: Margarodidae 88
duodecimpunctata, Diabrotica
Dysmicoccus neobrevis
Beardsley Hym.:
Pseudococcidae 87
ebena, Bactrocera
echinatus, Hyperodes
egena, Hoplasomoides
Elaphria succulenta Guenée
Lep.: Noctuidae 100
Empusa Hym.: Coccinellidae
99
eendias, Spalangia
eone, Pseudodipsas
Epicauta hirticornis Haag Col.:
Meloidae 89
epicharis, Bactrocera
Epilachna Col.: Coccinellidae 137
Epipagis cambogialis (Gueneé)
Lep.: Pyralidae 101
ericae, Nysius
eridania, Spodoptera
Errionota thrax (Linnaeus) Lep.:
Euphoriabae, Aphis
Euphorbarum, Celerio
Euptettix tenellus (Baker) Hem.:
Euxoa kerri
Swezey Lep.: Noctuidae 100
Euxoa messoria
(Harris) Lep.: Noctuidae 100
Euxoa radiani',
sec Agrotis
Euxoa tessellata
(Harris) Lep.: Noctuidae 100
excisus, Aspidiotus
fabae, Aphis
facialis, Bactrocera
fascialis, Hymenia
Faustinus apicalis Faust Col.:
Curculionidae 99
Faustinus cubae Boh. Col.:
Curculionidae 99
Feltia malefida Gueneé Lep.:
Noctuidae 100
Feltia subterranea (Fabricius)
Lep.: Noctuidae 100
fenestrata, Riciania
Ferrisia virgata (Cockerell)
Hem.: Pseudococcidae 88, 99
Ferrisiana virgata, see Ferrisia
virgata
fijienlis, Psytaltia
filamentosus, Pseudococcus
fishen, Smermus
flaminius, Homalotylus
flechert', Psytaltia
foridensis, Gascardia
Fopius arisanus (Sonan) Hym.:
Braconidae 9, 21-24, 27-36,
39, 41, 44-46
Fopius bevisi (Brues) Dip.:
Tephritidae 44
Fopius carinatus (Szépligeti)
Hym.: Braconidae 39, 41
Fopius carpomyiae (Silvestri)
Dip.: Tephritidae 44
Fopius caudatus (Szépligeti)
Dip.: Tephritidae 44
Fopius dealiensis (Fullaway)
Hym.: Braconidae 26, 36, 39,
41
Fopius desideratus (Bridwell)
Dip.: Tephritidae 44
Fopius niger (Szépligeti) Dip.:
Tephritidae 44
Fopius ottomorum (Fullaway)
Dip.: Tephritidae 44
Fopius persulcatus (Silvestri)
Dip.: Tephritidae 44
Fopius silvestrii (Wharton)
Dip.: Tephritidae 44
Fopius skinneri (Fullaway)
Hym.: Braconidae 10, 39, 41,
44, 46
Fopius vandenboschi
(Fullaway) Hym.: Braconidae
9, 21, 22, 27, 28, 31, 33, 34,
39, 41, 44, 46
formicarius, Cylas
formosae, Frankliniella
foveicollis, Haltica
Frankliniella brevicaudis Hood
Thy.: Thripidae 89
Frankliniella formosae Moulton
Thy.: Thripidae 89
Frankliniella tritici (Fitch) Thy.:
Thripidae 98
Frankliniella occidentalis
(Pergande) Thy.: Thripidae
138
frauenfeldi, Bactrocera
froggatti, Bactrocera
froggatti, Opius
frugiperda, Spodoptera
fullawayi, Biosteres
fullonia, Othreis
fulvifacies, Bactrocera
furcata, Aspidomorpha
furvescens, Bactrocera
fusca, Sabaethe
Galesus Hym.: Diapriidae 26
Gascardia Hym.: Coccidae 87
Gascardia africanaus (Green)
Hem.: Coccidae 87
Gascardia cirrhipediformis
Comstock Hem.: Coccidae
84, 87
Gascardia destructor
(Newstead) Hem.: Coccidae
87
Gascardia floridensis Comstock
Hem.: Coccidae 84, 87
geminata, Solenopsis
Geocoris bullatus (Say) Hem.:
Lygaeidae 99
gemalalus pacifica Kirkaldy
Hem.: Lygaeidae 29, 32
giffardi, Biosteres
giffardianus, Tetrastichus
giffardii, Tetrastichus
glabricorne, Paracopium
gloveri, Copidryas
gossypi, Aphis
gowdeyi, Haplothrips
gracilis, Bactrocera
gracilis, Phyllocharis
Graeffea crouanii (Le Guillou)
Pha. : Phasmatidae 137
grandicorne, Cryptochetum
Graphops pubescens (Melsh.)
Col.: Chrysomelidae 99
grotiisi, Spalangia
hageni, Diachasmimorpha
halfordiae, Bactrocera
Hallotica joveicollis (Jacoby)
Col.: Chrysomelidae 81, 82
hamadryas, Paracopium
hampei, Hypothenemus
Haplothrips gowdeyi (Frank)
Thy.: Phlaeothripidae 98
Haplothrips robustus Bagnall
Thy.: Phlaeothripidae 98
hargreavesi, Argopistes
Harmonia accata, see
Harmonia octomaculata
Harmonia octomaculata
(Fabricius) Col.:
Coccinellidae 54, 58, 59
Hedyus giffardi, see Biosteres
giffardi
helichrysi, Brachycaudus
Helicoverpa armigera (Hubner)
Lep.: Noctuidae 137
Heliodine quinqugeguata
Walshingham Lep.:
Heliodinidae 97, 103
Heliothis armigera, see
Helicoverpa armigera
Hellula Lep.: Pyralidae 138
Hellula undalis (Fabricius)
Lep.: Pyralidae 101
Hemiberlesia lataniae
(Signoret) Hem.: Diaspididae
83, 88
Hemichionaspis Hem.:
Diaspididae 88
hemisphaerica, Saissetia
Herse convolvuit, see Agrius convolvui
hesperidum, Coccus
Heteracris litoralis Rambur
Orth.: Acrididae 97
Heteropysyla cubana Crawford
Hem.: Psyllidae 49
himalayanus, Dirhinus
hirutus, Phenacoccus
hiria, Spalangia
hiricornis, Epicauta
hispidulus, Sitona
Holotrichia leucophthalma
Wied. Col.: Melolonthidae 100
Homalotylus flavinus
(Dalman) Hym.: Encyrtidae 61
honiarae, Bactrocera
Hoplosoma Col.: Chrysomelidae 82
Hoplosomoides egena (Weise) Col.: Chrysomelidae 81, 82
huenneri, Pappana
humilis, Pyrtyllia
hyalinata, Diaphania
Hylemya ciliicrura, see Delia pflatura
Hyles euphorbiarum (G. and P.) Lep.: Sphingidae 101
Hyles lineata Fabricius Lep.: Sphingidae 101
Hymenia fascialis Cramer Lep.: Pyralidae 101
Hymenia recurvalis (Fabricius) Lep.: Pyralidae 101
Hyperodes echinatus Ditz. Col.: Curculionidae 100
Hyphasis parvula Jacoby Col.: Chrysomelidae 81
Hypophomomonas bolina Lep.: Nymphalidae 101
Hypophomomonas misippus (Linnaeus) Lep.: Nymphalidae 101
Hypolycaena erylus Frischtorfer Lep.: Lycaenidae 84
Hypolycaena phorbas (Fabricius) Lep.: Lycaenidae 84, 85, 90
Hypothenemus hampei (Ferari) Col.: Scolytidae 138
Hypurus bertrandii Perris Col.: Curculionidae 97, 101, 102, 104, 105
Icerya: Hem.: Margarodidae 49, 51, 60
Icerya aegyptiaca (Douglas) Hem.: Margarodidae 1, 48-50, 63
Icerya purchasi Maskell Hem.: Margarodidae 51, 53, 55, 57, 59-61, 63, 99
Icerya seychellaren (Westwood) Hem.: Margarodidae 50, 52, 53, 55, 59-61, 88
iceria, Coccus hesperidum, Coccus heteracris
iceria, Rodolia
imerodes Col.: Curculionidae 81
inaequalis, Coelophora
incisi, Pyrtyllia
incivis, Peridroma
indica, Aceratoneuromyia
ipinatus, Prothiontermes
insignis, Orthezia
ipsiln, Agrotis
iritidis, Salebria
Isodromus Hym.: Encyrtidae 58
Jarvis, Bactrocera
Joanista Dipt.: Cecidomyiidae 100
juilieni, Aleurolobus
Junonia villida (Godart) Lep.: Nymphalidae 101
kerri, Euoxa
kiri, Bactrocera
kondis, Rhizococcus
kraussii, Bactrocera
kraussii, Diachasmimorpha
Lamprosema octasema (Meyrick) Lep.: Pyralidae 137
lataniae, Hemiberlesia
latifascia, Spodoptera
latifrons, Bactrocera
lepidus, Sitona
Leptocorisa varicornis (Fabricius) Hem.: Alydidae 89
Lepicorisa varicornis (Fabricius) Lep.: Nymphalidae 89
leucophthalma, Holotrichia
leveri, Phoenocarpa
lineata, Hyles
Liriomyza Dip.: Agromyzidae 137
littoralis, Heteracris
littoralis, Spodoptera
litura, Spodoptera
longicaudata, Diachasmimorpha
longicornis, Bactrocera
longicornis, Diabrotica
longissima, Brontispa
longispinus, Pseudococcus
lorata, Bar1
loreyi, Mythimna
Loxostege bifidalis (Fabricius)
Lep.: Pyralidae 101
Loxostege similalis Guenee
Lep.: Pyralidae 101
Luperomorpha albofasciata
Duvivier Col.: Chrysomelidae 81
Luperomorpha vittata Duvivier
Col.: Chrysomelidae 89
lycaenoides, Athene
Lycophotia infector Ochs. Lep.: Nocuidae 100
Lycophotia margaritosa
Haworth Lep.: Nocuidae 100
Lycophotia saucia Hubner Lep.: Nocuidae 100
lypyriformis, Microlinarus
Macrosiphum solanifolii, see
Aphis euphorbiae
magnoliae, Aulacorthum
maidiradicis, Aphis
malabaricus, Sahyadrassus
malefida, Feltia
Mamestra trifoli, see Discestra trifoli
mangiferae, Drosicha
manicatus, Chirothrips
margaritosa, Lycophotia
Margaronia hyalinata, see
Diaphania hyalinata
Maruca testulalis (Geyer) Lep.: Pyralidae 137
Masicera Dipt.: Tachinidae 54
medicaginis, Aphis
megacephala, Phidole
melanogaster, Bactrocera
Melanoplus spretus (Walsh.) Orth.: Acrididae 98
melanotus, Bactrocera
Melittobia indica, see
Aceratoneuromyia indica
mellicollis, Disonycha
Menochilus sexmaculatus (Fabricius) Col.: Chrysomelidae 54, 55
messoria, Euoxa
Microcentrum retinerve (Burmeister) Orth.: Acrididae 98
Microlarinus lyrpiformis (Wollaston) Col.: Curculionidae 100
middletoni, Aphis
minor, Pinnaspis
minata, Bactrocera
miranda, Saissetia
misippus, Hypolimnas
Mollitrichosiphon nandii BaSu
Hem.: Aphididae 86
Monolepta Col.: Chrysomelidae 81
Monolepta morio (Jac.) Col.: Chrysomelidae 81
Montrouzieri, Cryptolaemus
morio, Monolepta
morstatti, Xyleborus
morula, Bactrocera
mucronis, Bactrocera
musae, Bactrocera
Mythimna loreyi (Duponchel)
Lep.: Noctuidae 100
Myzus ornatus Laing Hcm.:
Aphididae 83, 86
Myzus persectae (Sulzer) Hem.:
Aphididae 86, 98
Myzus pseudosolani Theobald
Hem.: Aphididae 98
nandii, Mollitrichosiphon
Nasonovia rostrata David and
Hameed Hcm.: Aphididae 85, 86
Nasturtii, Aphis
Nasutitermes Iso.: Termitidae 68, 69
nebulosus, Sphragisticus
neobrevipes, Dymiscoccus
neohumeralis, Bactrocera
Neolastiptera portulacae
(Cook) Dipt.: Cecidomyiidae 97, 103
Neotermes rainboii (Hill) Iso.:
Kalotermitidae 1, 64-71
Neotermes samoanu8
(Holmgren) Iso.:
Kalotermitidae 66
Neotermes sarasini N. and K.
Holmgren Iso.:
Kalotermitidae 66
Nezara viridula Linnaeus Hem.:
Pentatomidae 83, 137
niger, Fopius
nigreronvosa, Pentalonia
Nipaecoccus vastator, see
Nipaecoccus viridis
Nipaecoccus viridis Newstead
Hem.: Pseudococcidae 88
Nisota Col.: Chrysomelidae 81, 82
njalenis, Pseudococcus
noctuella, Nomophila
Nomophila noctuella Dennis
and Schiff Lep.: Pyrolidae
101
nubilalis, Ostrinia
nubilus, Bactrocera
nucicolora, Elaphria
Nyssia Hem.: Lygaeidae 99
Nyssia coenosus Stål Hem.:
Lygaeidae 99
Nyssia cymoides Spinola Hem.:
Lygaeidae 99
Nyssia delectus White Hem.:
Lygaeidae 99
obliqua, Spilosoma
obscura, Bactrocera
occidentalis, Frankliniella
ochrosiae, Bactrocera
octasema, Lamprosema
octomaculata, Harmonia
Oecophylla smaragdina
(Fabricius) Hym.: Formicidae
85
Oidosoma africanum Jacoby
Col.: Chrysomelidae 89
oleae, Bactrocera
oleae, Saissetia
oleraceae, Ceutorhynchus
Omophota Col.: Chrysomelidae
83
Omophota cyanipennis
Fabricius Col.: Chrysomelidae
89
Omophota sexnotata Harold
Col.: Chrysomelidae 83, 84
oophilos, Opius
Opis Hym.: Braconidae 36, 38
Opis angaleti, see
Diachasmimorpha longicauda
Opis comperei, see
Diachasmimorpha longicaudata
Opis concolor, see Psytalia concolor
Opis deeralensis, see Fopius
deealensis
Opis fijiensis, see Psytalia fijiensis
Opus fletcheri, see Psytalia
fletcheri
Opus formosanus, see
Diachasmimorpha
longicaudata
Opus fruggatti Fullaway Hym.:
Braconidae 26, 34, 35, 39, 42
Opus fullawayi, see Biosteres
fullawayi
Opus giffardi, see Biosteres
giffardi
Opus hageni, see
Diachasmimorpha hageni
Opus humillis, see Psytalia
humillis
Opus incisi, see Psytalia incisi
Opus kraussii, see
Diachasmimorpha kraussii
Opus longicaudatus, see
Diachasmimorpha
longicaudata
Opus longicaudatus var.
chocki, see Diachasmimorpha
longicaudata
Opus longicaudatus var.
malaiensis, see
Diachasmimorpha
longicaudata
Opus oophilos, see Fopius
arisans
Opus perkinsi Fullaway Hym.:
Braconidae 26, 39, 42
Opus perproximus Silvestri
Hym.: Braconidae 44
Opus persulcatus, see Fopius
arisans or Fopius
vandenboschi
Opus skinneri, see Fopius
skinneri
Opus tryoni, see
Diachasmimorpha tryoni
Opus vandenboschi, see Fopius
vandenboschi
Opus watersi, see
Diachasmimorpha dacusii
Oricoruna arcotensis Mani and
Kurian Hym.: Pteromalidae
54
orientalis, Aonidiella
orientalis, Atherigona
ornatus, Myzus
Orthieia insignis Browne Hem.: Orthoziidae 87
orventatus, Bruchus
Oryctes rhinoceros (Linnaeus)
Col.: Scarabaeidae 87
Ostrinia nubilalis (Hubner)
Lep.: Pyralidae 101
Othreis fullonia (Clerck) Lep.: Noctuidae 137
ottomoanus, F opius
Pachycrepoides coorgensis, sce
Oricoruoo arcotensis
Pachycrepoideus dubius, see
Pachycrepoideus vindemiae
Pachycrepoideus vindemiae (Rondani) Hym.: Pteromalidac 23, 26, 29, 39, 43
pacificus, Germalus
planococcus, Planococcus
pagdeni, Bactrocera
palliata, Phytomyza
pallida, Bactrocera
palmi, Thrips
Papuana huebneri (Fairmaire)
Col.: Scarabaeidae 137
Paracopium Hem.: Tingidae 89
Paracopium cingalese Walker Hem.: Tingidae 89
Paracopium glabricorne Montandon Hem.: Tingidae 89
Paracopium hamadryas Drake Hem.: Tingidae 87
parafrauenfeldi, Bactrocera
Paragus tibialis Fallen Dipt.: Syrphidae 100
parula, Hyphasis
parvus, Pheoococcus
passijlorae, Bactrocera
pavoo, Crocidolomia
Pealius rubi Takahashi Hem.: Alyeoididae 87
pectinatus, Aonidiella
Pegomya dolosa Cockerell Hym.: Aleyrodidac 87
picea, Bactrocera
pilicornis, Shizocerella
Pinnaspis minor
portulacae, Ceutorhynchus
portalacae, Neolasioptera
Proctiphilus ceterodendri
Okamoto and Takahashi Hem.: Aphididae 85, 86
Prodenia eridania, see
Spodoptera eridania
Prodenia latifascia, see
Spodoptera latifascia
proxica, Bactrocera
Prorhinotermes inopinatus
Silvestri Iso.: Rhinotermitidae 69
proserpina, Taraphagus
Protopulvinaria pyriformis
Cockerell Hem.: Coccidiae 84, 87
Psyllus serius (Renter) Hem.: Miridae 99
Psara bipunctatiss Fabricius
Lep.: Pyralidae 101
Pseudischnapus aienius
(Newstead) Hem.: Diaspididac 88
Pseudococcus adonidum, see
Pseudococcus longispinus
Pseudococcus brevipes
Cockerell Hem.: Pseudococcidae 99
Pseudococcus filamentosus (Cockerell) Hem.: Pseudococcidae 88
Pseudococcus longispinus
Targioni-Tozzetti Hem.: Pseudococcidae 84, 88
Pseudococcus myalensis Laing Hem.: Pseudococcidae 88
Pseudococcus solani Cockerell Hem.: Pseudococcidae 99
Pseudococcus virgatus
Cockerell Hem.: Pseudococcidae 99
Pseudodipsas eone Waterhouse and Lyell Lep.: Lycaenidae 90
Pseudomela murrayi Baly Col.: Chrysomelidae 89
Pseudomeloe pustulata (Er.)
Col.: Meloidae 100
Pseudoselani, Myzus
psidi, Bactrocera
psidi, Pulvinaria
Psyllia Hym.: Braconidae 23
Psyllia africana (Szépligeti) Hym.: Braconidae 26
Psyllia concolor (Szépligeti)
Hym.: Braconidae 20, 27, 29-31, 34-36, 39, 42
Psytalia fijiensis (Fullaway)
Hym.: Braconidae 26, 29-36, 39, 42

Psytalia fletcheri (Silvestri)
Hym.: Braconidae 9, 21-25, 31, 33, 34, 39, 42, 43, 46

Psytalia humilis (Silvestri)
Hym.: Braconidae 39

Psytalia incisi (Silvestri) Hym.:
Braconidae 21, 22, 27, 31, 34, 39, 42, 44

Pternistria bispina
Hem.: Coreidae 84

pubescens, Graphops

Pullus cocoecidiva (Ayyar)
Col.: Coccinellidae 49, 53, 54

Pulvinaria
Hem.: Coccidae 87

Pulvinaria psidii
Maskell Hem.:
Coccidae 87

Pulvinaria urbicola Cockerell
Hem.: Coccidae 84, 87

pumila, Rodolia

purci, Buchrya

purpureus, Tetramichus

pustulata, Pseudometeole

Pycnoderes quadri-maculatus
Guerin Hem.: Miridae 99

Pyrausta nubilalis, see Ostrinia

pyriformis, Protopulvinaria

quadrisetosa, Bactrocera

quadrimaculatus, Pycnoderes

quinqueguttata, Heliodine

radius, Agrotis

recurvalis, Hymenia

rainbowi, Neotermes

redunca, Bactrocera

renardii, Zelus

repleta, Agrotis

Reticulitermes virginicus
(Banks) Iso.: Rhinotermitidae 69

retinerve, Microcentrum

rhamni, Aphis

rhinoceros, Oryctes

Rhizoecus kondonis K. Hem.:
Pseudococcidae 99

robustus, Hoplothrips

rhodophilia, Diacrisia

Rynchosteres caudatus
(Szépligeti) Hym.: Braconidae 44

Ricana fenestra (Fabricius)
Hem.: Ricanitidae 86

Rodolia Col.: Coccinellidae
53-55, 59-62

Rodolia breviscula Weise Col.:
Coccinellidae 49, 54, 56-58, 60, 61

Rodolia cardinalis (Mulsant)
Col.: Coccinellidae 54, 55, 57-63

Rodolia icereya Jenson Col.:
Coccinellidae 55

Rodolia pumila (Weise) Col.:
Coccinellidae 49, 54-63

Rodolia ruficollis Mulsant Col.:
Coccinellidae 53, 54

roseae, Athalia

rostrata, Nasonovia

rubri, Peatius

ruficollis, Rodolia

rivina, Tirathaba

rumicis, Aphis

russeilia, Tetraleurodes

Sabaethe Col.:
Chrysomelidae 81

Sabaethe fusca (Fabricius) Col.:
Chrysomelidae 81

Sahyadrassus malabaricus
(Moore) Lcp.: Hepialidae 89

Saissetia coffeae
(Walker) Hem.: Coccidae 87, 99

Saissetia hemisphaerica
(Targioni-Tozzetti) Hem.:
Coccidae 84, 87

Saissetia miranda (Cockerell
and Parrott) Hem.: Coccidae 87

Saissetia oleae (Olivier) Hem.:
Coccidae 87

Saissetia zanzibarensis Williams
Hem.: Coccidae 87

Salebria iriditis Meyrick Lep.:
Pyralidae 90

Samaraius, Steatoecoccus

samoae, Bactrocera

samoanus, Neotermes

sanguinolenta, Agallia

sarasini, Neotermes

saucia, Lycopholia

Scapanes australis
(Boisduval) Col.: Sciaridae 137

Scaptocerus castanea Percy
Hem.: Pentatomidae 99

Schizocerella plicicornis
Holmgren Hem.: Tenthredinidae 97, 102, 104

Sciutothrips citri (Moulton)
Thy.: Thripidae 98

Seymurus Col.: Coccinellidae 54

seriatus, Psallus

setinervis, Bactrocera

sexmaculatus, Menochilus

sexnotata, Omopohita

seychellarum, Icerya

silvestrii, Fopius

similalis, Loxyostege

sinulata, Bactrocera

Sinomegoura citricola van der
goot Hem.: Aphididae 86

Sitona flavescens, see Sitona

lepidus

Sitona hispidulus (Fabricius)
Col.: Curculionidae 100

Sitona lepidus Gyllenhali Col.:
Curculionidae 100

skinneri, Fopius

s-littera, Systena

smaragdina, Octophylla

Smermus fisheri Fisher Col.:
Cerambicidae 89

simiroideus, Dacus

solaris, Aulacorthum

solaris, Phenacoccus

solaris, Pseudococcus

Soenopsis geminata (Fabricius)
Hym.: Formicidae 24

solomonensis, Dacus

sordidus, Cosmomolites

Spalangia Hym.: Pteromalidae 23, 25, 26, 31, 37

Spalangia aer Silvestri Hym.:
Pteromalidae 23

Spalangia cameroni Perkins
Hym.: Pteromalidae 30, 31, 43

Spalangia endius Walker Hym.:
Pteromalidae 23, 24, 29, 31, 34, 35, 39, 43

Spalangia groiuss Girault
Hym.: Pteromalidae 23

Spalangia hirita Haliday Hym.:
Pteromalidae 24, 43

Spalangia stoxmytials Girault
Hym.: Pteromalidae 23

Spalangia phillipinensis, see
Spalangia endius

Sphaerophoria cylindrica Say
Dipt.: Syrphidae 100

Sphragisticus reublous (Fallen)
Hem.: Lygaeidae 99

Spilosoma obliqua Walker Lcp.:
Arctiidae 90

spiraecola, Aphid

Spodoptera eridania (Cramer)
Lcp.: Noctuidae 100
Spodoptera frugiperda (Smith)  
Lep.: Noctuidae 100

Spodoptera latifascia Walker  
Lep.: Noctuidae 101

Spodoptera litoralis  
(Boisduval) Lep.: Noctuidae 101

Spodoptera litura (Fabricius)  
Lep.: Noctuidae 80, 84, 85, 137

Spretus, Melanoplus  
Steatococcus samaraeus  
Morrison Hem.: Margarodidae 58

stomoxysiae, Spalangia  
strigifinis, Bactrocera  
styx, Acherontia  
subterranea, Feltia  
Syntomosphyrum indica, see  
Aceraloneuromyia indica  
Systena s-littera (Linnaeus)  
Col.: Chrysomelidae 99

Systena taeniata (Say) Col.:  
Chrysomelidae 99

tabaci, Bemisia  
tabaci, Thrips  
taeniata, Systena  
Tarophagus proserrpina  
(Kirkaldy) Hem.: Delphaciidae 137

tau, Bactrocera  
tenellus, Eutetix  
terrestris, Nysius  
tessellata, Euxoa  
testulalis, Maruca  
Tetraleurodes russellae Cohic  
Hem.: Aleyrodidae 87

Tetrastichus Hym.:  
Eulophidae 29, 49, 54, 55, 62

Tetrastichus dacicida Silvestri  
Hym.: Eulophidae 22, 24, 39, 43

Tetrastichus giffardianus  
Silvestri Hym.: Eulophidae  
20, 22, 24, 27, 29-32, 34, 35,  
37, 39, 43, 45

Tetrastichus giffardii Silvestri  
Hym.: Eulophidae 39

Tetrastichus purpureus  
(Cameron) Hym.: Eulophidae  
54, 55

thax, Erionota  
Theama argyrophorum Hering  
Lep.: Oecophoridae 101

Thrips palmi Karny Thy.:  
Thripidae 137, 138

Thrips tabaci Lindeman Thy.:  
Thripidae 98

Thyrocephalus albertisi  
(Fauvel) Col.: Staphylinidae 26

tibialis, Paragus  
Tirathaba rufivena (Walker)  
Lep.: Pyralidae 137

Toxoptera aurantii (B. de F.)  
Hem.: Aphididae 98

triclisiae, Aleuroplatus  
trigoli, Discestra  
trilineata, Bactrocera  
tritici, Frankliniella  
Trybiographa daci, see  
Aganaspis daci  
tryoni, Bactrocera  
tryoni, Diachasmimorpha  
tubidas, Philonthus  
turneri, Bactrocera  

umbrosa, Bactrocera  
Unaspis citri (Comstock) Hem.:  
Diaspididae 137

undalis, Hellula  
undulata, Phyllocharis  
unifasciata, Bactrocera  
unipunctata, Bactrocera  
uraianus, Aleurotubercurulatus  
urbicola, Pulvinaria  
vandenboschi, Fopius  
varicornis, Leptocorisa  
varipes, Bactrocera  
versatus, Adoretus  
villida, Junonia  
vindemiae, Pachycrepoideus  
vintor, Nysius  
viridula, Nysara  
virgata, Ferrisiana  
virginicus, Reticulitermes  
viridis, Nipaecoccus  
viridula, Nysara  
vittata, Diabrotica  
vittata, Luperomorpha  

Wasmannia auropunctata  
(Rozer) Hym.: Formicidae 70

xanthodes, Bactrocera  
Xerophilaphis plotnikovi, see  
Brachianguis plotnikovi  
Xyleborus morstatti, see  
Xylosandrus compactus  
Xyleutes ceramicus Walker  
Lep.: Cossidae 90

Xylosandrus compactus  
(Eichoff) Col.: Scolytidae 89

xylostella, Plutella  

zarzibarenis, Saissetia  
Zelus renardii Kolniati Hem.:  
Reduviidae 24

Zeugodacus Dip.: Tephritidae  
11

Zeuzera coffeae Neitner Lep.:  
Cossidae 90
Previous dossiers on Pacific pests

A. Biological Control: Pacific Prospects
   Inkata Press, Melbourne 1987

1. *Graeffea crouanii*, coconut stick insect
2. *Tarophagus proserpina*, taro planthopper
3. *Heteropsylla cubana*, leucaena psyllid
4. *Pentalonia nigronervosa*, banana aphid
5. *Pseudaulacaspis pentagona*, white peach scale
6. *Aspidionus destructor*, coconut scale
7. *Unaspis citri*, white louse scale
8. *Nezara viridula*, green vegetable bug
9. *Thrips palmi*
10. *Adoretus versutus*, rose beetle
11. *Oryctes rhinoceros*, rhinoceros beetle
12. *Papua huebneri*, taro beetle
13. *Scapanes australis*, scapanes
15. *Brontispa longissima*, coconut leaf hispa
16. *Aulacophora* spp., pumpkin beetles
17. *Cylas formicarius*, sweet potato weevil
18. *Cosmopolites sordidus*, banana weevil borer
19. *Liriomyza* spp., leafminers
20. *Platelia xylostella*, diamondback cabbage moth
21. *Agonoxena argaula*, coconut flat moth
22. *Crocidolomia binotalis*, cabbage cluster caterpillar
23. *Maruca testulalis*, bean podborer
24. *Tirathaba rufivena*, coconut spike moth
25. *Lamprosema octasema*, banana scab moth
26. *Heliothis armigera*, cotton bollworm
27. *Othreis fullonia*, fruit piercing moth
28. *Spodoptera litura*, cluster caterpillar
29. *Polyphagotarsonemus latus*, broad mite
30. *Achatina fulica*, giant African snail
31. *Bidens pilosa*, cobbler's pegs
32. *Elephantopus scaber*, elephant's foot
33. *Mikania micrantha*, mile-a-minute weed
34. *Cassia tora* and *C. obtusifolia*, foetid cassia
35. *Merremia peltata*, merremia
36. *Cyperus rotundus*, nutgrass
37. *Kyllinga polyphylla*, navua sedge
38. *Sida acuta*, broom weed
39. *Sida rhombifolia*, paddy's lucerne

Phasmatodea
Hemiptera
Hemiptera
Hemiptera
Hemiptera
Hemiptera
Hemiptera
Hemiptera
Thysanoptera
Coleoptera
Coleoptera
Coleoptera
Coleoptera
Coleoptera
Coleoptera
Coleoptera
Coleoptera
Diptera
Diptera
Lepidoptera
Lepidoptera
Lepidoptera
Lepidoptera
Lepidoptera
Lepidoptera
Lepidoptera
Lepidoptera
Acarina
Gastropoda
Asteraceae
Asteraceae
Asteraceae
Caesalpiniaceae
Convolvulaceae
Cyperaceae
Cyperaceae
Malvaceae
Malvaceae
40. *Clidemia hirta*, Koster's curse
41. *Mimosa invisa*, giant sensitive plant
42. *Mimosa pudica*, sensitive plant
43. *Eichhornia crassipes*, water hyacinth
44. *Salvinia molesta*, salvinia
45. *Solanum torvum*, prickly solanum
46. *Lantana camara*, lantana
47. *Stachytarpheta urticifolia*, blue rat's tail

B. Biological Control: Pacific Prospects. Supplement 1
ACIAR, Canberra 1989

1. *Aleurodicus dispersus*, spiraling whitefly
2. *Frankliniella occidentalis*, western flower thrips
3. *Thrips tabaci*, onion thrips
4. *Hypothenemus hampei*, coffee berry borer
5. *Hellula spp.*, cabbage centre grubs
6. *Erionota thrax*, banana skipper

Enquiries concerning the availability of these publications should be addressed to:

ACIAR
GPO Box 1571
Canberra City  2601
AUSTRALIA